





0<sup>32</sup>

7/6



**THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR  
OF MODERN IRISH**

卷之三

THE NEW ERA  
GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

By  
THE REV. GERALD O'NOLAN  
M.A., B.D., D.LITT.  
PROFESSOR OF IRISH, ST. PATRICK'S COLLEGE, MAYNOOTH

Dom is tleacht a reacht do níomhaó,  
Dom is eol a sceol do scaoileadh,  
Dom is áil a cailt do chumneam,  
Ó's liom is cóir a glór do niamhaó.

(Cf. Keating's Poems, 48.)

THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND  
LIMITED  
DUBLIN AND CORK  
1934

PRINTED BY  
THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY  
OF IRELAND, LIMITED  
89 TALBOT STREET, DUBLIN

## BROLLAC.

Do Shaeðealaibh na hÉireann coirbhrim an teabhrán so, le hioncas go mbeiribh sé 'na "Bac sa Þearnam" doibh i gcoinnibh an Þéarlaçais, agus i gcoinnibh na Salltaçta. Tá teanga Ársa uasal agamh, agus cár misde Óúinn bheit mórdálac aistí? Tá daoine ann, agus is é is doic leo gur rudo gan rat an Gramadac—gur fearr i bpao, adeirid, claoide leis an litriðeact! 'Seao, agus gan teanga ná litriðeact a chuisgeann ar aon tslaact! Tá dul amuða uatbásac ar an dream san. Is éactac an congnamh an Gramadac do luict foðluma na teangsan agus do luict léigste na litriðeacta. Ni congnamh go dtí i! Oireann culait uasal do smaomeamh áluinn, ac is mó smaomeamh áluinn a loitcear go minic le culait giobalaç gránda do cur um! "Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci!"

GEARÓID Ó NUALLÁIN  
AG MUÍS NUADAT DOM  
7 LÁ 'LE BRÍGDE MÓIU AGAMH.

1934.



## CONTENTS

*(The numbers at the beginning of the lines refer to the sections).*

	Page
Abbreviations .....	xiii

### PART I.—PHONOLOGY.

#### Section

I.—The modern Irish Alphabet .....	1
II.—The Simple Vowels (24) .....	1
III.—The Diphthongs (17) .....	1
IV.—The Consonants (60) .....	1
V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants .....	2
VI.—Examination of the Sounds .....	3
Aspiration and Eclipsis, and their causes .....	5
Dynamic Aspiration and Eclipsis .....	6

### PART II.—ACCIDENCE.

#### Chapter I.—The Article.

1.—Declension .....	7
3.—Aspiration after .....	8
4.—Eclipsis ,,, .....	9
5.—The form <i>na h-</i> .....	9
7.—Survivals .....	10

#### Chapter II.—The Noun.

8.—Various Kinds of Stems .....	11
10-20.—First Declension .....	11
21-31.—Second ,,, .....	14
32-44.—Third ,,, .....	16
45-51.—Fourth ,,, .....	19
52-76.—Fifth ,,, .....	21

#### Chapter III.—The Adjective.

78.—First Declension .....	29
79.—Second ,,, .....	29
80.—Third ,,, .....	29
81.—Fourth ,,, .....	30

Section	Page
82-3.—Notes	30
84.—Formation	31
85-92.—Comparison	32
93-107.—Numeral Adjectives	36
108.—Adjectives of quantity, not numerals	43
109.—Pronominal Adjectives	45

#### Chapter IV.—The Pronoun.

110.—The Personal Pronouns	47
111-115.—Prepositional Pronouns	48
116.—Notes on „ „	50
117.—G. prons. suffixed to preps.	51
118.—Suffixed -o in Verbs	51
119-120.—Demonstrative Pronouns	51
121.—Interrogative Pronouns	52
122-3.— „ Particles	52
124.—Indefinite Pronouns	53
125.—Reflexive „	54
126-7.—Relative „	54

#### Chapter V.—The Verb.

129.—Simple Verbs	58
130.—Subsidiary Forms	60
131.—Notes on Moods and Tenses	60
133-4.—Second Conjugation	62
135-152.—Compound Verbs	63
153.—The Substantive Verb	75
154.—The Copula	76
155.—Remains of Compound Verbs	77

#### Chapter VI.—Adverbs.

156-8.—Various Kinds	79
159.—Notes on the Adverbs	82

#### Chapter VII.—Conjunctions.

160-1.—Eleven different kinds	84
-------------------------------	----

#### Chapter VIII.—Prepositions.

162.—Simple and Compound. Some governing D., some A., and some either	88
---	----

#### Chapter IX.—Interjections—(163)

## PART III.—SYNTAX.

Section	Page
<b>Chapter I.—Syntax of the Article.</b>	
164.—Syntactical Rules	92
165.—Article in I., not in E.	95
166.—Vivid use of the Article	97
<b>Chapter II.—Syntax of the Noun.</b>	
167.—Uses of the Nominative	98
168.—The Projected „	98
169.—The Virtual „	98
170.—Apposition	99
171.—Absolute Construction	100
172.—Sense „	101
173.—The Genitive	102
174.—The Dative	104
175-6.—The Accusative	106
177.—The Vocative	108
178.—The Verbal Noun	108
179.—Phrase Nouns	110
180.—Noun Clauses	112
181.—Dynamic Aspiration	113
182.—Remarks on the Cases	113
183.—Number	113
<b>Chapter III.—Syntax of the Adjective.</b>	
184.-194.—	115
<b>Chapter IV.—Syntax of the Pronoun.</b>	
195.—Fully declined. Sometimes abs.	121
196.—Virtual N. or A. of Extent in Space	121
197.—The Genitive forms	122
198.—The Dative „	122
199.-216.—Prolepsis	122
200.—é, í, iāo, eāo	123
201.—Proleptic sé	123
202.— „ san	124
203.— „ so, seo	124
204.— „ é sm	124
205.— „ sioé (sioí, sio iāo)	125
206-11.—„ G. sg. Δ	125
212.—Proportion Sentences	127

Section	Page
213.—Proleptic $\Delta$ (G. pl.) .... .... .... ....	129
214.—The Suffixed Pronouns 1 <sup>o</sup> $\tau\omega$ . 2 <sup>o</sup> $\alpha\kappa u.$ 3 <sup>o</sup> $\alpha\mu\pi,$ $\iota e\iota s$ $\iota\mu\mu e,$ $\dot{\iota}\mu\mu e,$ etc. 4 <sup>o</sup> $\alpha\mu\lambda\alpha\tau\omega$ .... .... ....	129
216.—Further remarks on proleptic $\Delta$ .... .... ....	132
217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns .... .... ....	133
218.—The Interrogative     „ .... .... ....	134
219.—Analogical $\tau o$ .... .... .... ....	135
220.—Exclamatory “How!” .... .... .... ....	135
221.—Indefinite Pronouns .... .... .... ....	136
222.—The Suffixed Pronouns .... .... .... ....	136
223.—The Relative Pronouns :—	
I.—Of Extent in Degree .... .... .... ....	137
II.—Direct for Oblique :—	
A.—In Temporal Clauses .... .... .... ....	137
B.—In Modal     „ .... .... ....	138
C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences .... .... ....	139
D.—In a somewhat rare construction .... .... ....	139
III.—The Oblique Rel. $\Delta^n,$ $\alpha\kappa^c$ .... .... ....	139
IV.—Double Relative Construction .... .... ....	140
V.—Multiple Relative Sentences .... .... ....	143
VI.—Negative Relatives .... .... .... ....	143
VII.—Rel. in Compar. and Superl. Clauses .... ....	144
VIII.—Interrogative and Relative .... .... ....	144
IX.—The Compound Relative .... .... .... ....	144

### Chapter V.—Syntax of the Verb.

The Copula .... .... .... ....	146
224.—A Logical Copula .... .... .... ....	146
225.—Subject and Predicate .... .... .... ....	147
226-244.—Classification Sentences .... .... ....	147
245-260.—Identification     „ .... .... ....	151
261.—Note on Proper Names .... .... .... ....	156
262.—The proleptic pronoun in Type I .... ....	156
263.—Complex Elliptical Sentences .... .... ....	156
264-9.—Idioms with “is” .... .... .... ....	157
270.—The Substantive Verb .... .... .... ....	161
271.—Introductory “τά” .... .... .... ....	163
272-289.—Other Verbs .... .... .... ....	164
272.—Order of words .... .... .... ....	164
273.—Number .... .... .... ....	164

## CONTENTS

xi

Section	Page
274.—Tense ....	165
275.—Mood ....	165
276.—The Indicative ....	166
277.—The Conditional ....	166
278.—The Subjunctive ....	167
279.-285.—Syntax of Conditional Sentences ....	168
286.—Auxiliary <i>tem</i> ....	170
287.—Neutral „ ....	170
288.— <i>Deirim</i> ....	171
289.— <i>Céigim</i> ....	171
290.—Impersonal Verbs ....	171
291.2.—The Autonomous Forms ....	172
293.—Special uses of the Participle ....	174

## Chapter VI.—Syntax of Adverbs.

294.5.—Notes ....	176
296.8.—Expression of the Date ....	177

## Chapter VII.—Syntax of Conjunctions.

299.— <i>Agus</i> ; <i>Agus, ná</i> ; <i>ní . . . ná</i> ; <i>ní . . . ná ní</i> ; <i>ná ná . . . nó ná</i> ; <i>má</i> with Condit. ; <i>vá mba</i> =even ; <i>ná</i> , than ....	179
--	-----

## Chapter VIII.—Syntax of Prepositions.

300.—Partitive <i>oe</i> ....	182
301.—Defining <i>oe</i> ....	183
302.—Partitive <i>as</i> ....	183
303.—Prepositional Phrases ....	184
304.—Meanings and Uses of Simple Prepositions ....	184
305.—Prepositions after Nouns and Adjectives ....	189
306.—Prepositions after Verbs ....	191
307.—Various ....	197

## Chapter IX.—Syntax of the Sentence.

308.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction ....	198
309.—Contamination, etc. ....	199
310-312.—Special Problems ....	199
313.—Repetition of Words ....	202
314.—Order of Words ....	203
315.—Simile and Metaphor ....	204
316.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets ....	205

Section					
317.—Illogical Elements in Construction	....	....	....	....	205
318.—Chiastic Construction	....	....	....	....	206
319.—Progressive Forms	....	....	....	....	206
320.—I. objective rather than subjective	....	....	....	....	206
321.—I. concrete     "     abstract	....	....	....	....	206
322.—Difference of Colouring	....	....	....	....	207

**PART IV.—PROSODY.**

323.—The Metres	....	....	....	....	208
324.—Syllabic Metres ( <i>Oán Oíreacá</i> )	....	....	....	....	208
A.— <i>Deibhöe</i> .—Rules. Classification of Consonants. Ex.	....	....	....	....	208
B.— <i>Rannaisgeáct mó�</i>	....	....	....	....	210
C.— <i>Rannaisgeáct mó� Sáirio</i>	....	....	....	....	211
D.—     " <i>beas</i>	....	....	....	....	211
E.—     "     "     "	....	....	....	....	211
F.— <i>Séadraó</i> ( <i>Séadraó</i> )	....	....	....	....	212
G.— <i>Deacnaó</i> <i>beas</i>	....	....	....	....	212
H.     " <i>mór</i>	....	....	....	....	213
I.— <i>Cas-báirone</i>	....	....	....	....	213
J.— <i>Rionnaíro</i>	....	....	....	....	213
325.—Accentual Metres	....	....	....	....	214
A.— <i>Laoi</i> ( <i>Laoiò</i> )	....	....	....	....	214
B.— <i>Rosc</i>	....	....	....	....	215
C.— <i>Caoineáò</i> ( <i>Tuiream</i> ; <i>marbhna</i> )	....	....	....	....	215
D.— <i>Amhrán</i>	....	....	....	....	216

**Appendix.—WORD FORMATION.**

326-337.—A.—Verbal Nouns	....	....	....	....	221
338.—     B.—Other Nouns	....	....	....	....	224
338.— I.—Combination of Adjective and Noun	....	....	....	....	224
339.— II.—Combination of Noun and Noun	....	....	....	....	224
340.—III.—Combination of Indeclinable Particle with Noun	....	....	....	....	224
341-362.—IV.—By means of Prepositional Prefixes	....	....	....	....	225
363.—V.—By means of Suffixes. A.—From Adjectives	....	....	....	....	231
364.—B.—From Nouns	....	....	....	....	233
365.—C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns	....	....	....	....	236
366.—D.—From Verbs	....	....	....	....	236
367.—Formation of Adjectives	....	....	....	....	237
368.—Formation of Verbs	....	....	....	....	237

## ABBREVIATIONS.

A.—Accusative.	Naic.—Poems of Pádraigín Naicéao.
Aes.—Aesop ά τάμις σο νείριν.	Im.—Imitation of Christ.
AOO.—Poems of Aonghus Ó Óláis.	K.—Keating.
AOR.—Aodagán Ó Rataile.	KH.—Keating's History.
AR.—Beata Aoða Ruard.	KP.—Keating's Poems.
BK.—Bergin's Keating.	KTB.—Trí bior-Úaoitē an Óáis.
BN.—Bible Stories (O'Leary).	L.—Latin.
BR.—BRICRIU.	Lmc.—Luigearó Mac Con (O'Leary).
CCU.—Céad de Ceoltairib Uilao.	LO.—Laoi Oisín ar Tir na n-Ós.
CO.—An Craos Dearman.	Lúc.—Lucián (O'Leary).
CMD.—Criost Mac Dé.	M.—Munster ; masculine.
Conn.—Connacht.	Mac.—Sgéalardeact na Macabéac.
CS.—Na Ceitre Soisgén (O'Leary).	MSF.—Mo Sgéal Féim.
D.—Dative.	N.—Nominative ; Niam.
DO.—Keating's "Dion- brollac."	Neut.—Neuter.
DO.—Dán Dé (M'Kenna).	NnS.—Naoi nGábhao an Siolla Óuib.
Dott.—Dottin, Manuel d'Irlandais Moyen.	P.—Predicate.
E.—English.	PF.—Poems of Pearse Ferriter.
eis.—Eisirt (O'Leary).	PH.—Passions & Homilies (Leabhar Óreac).
es.—Eocair-sciat an Aifrimn.	PIM.—Primer of Irish Metrics.
F.—Feminine.	Pl.—Plural.
FC.—Fíle an Comaraís.	pol.—P. O'Leary.
FF.—Keating's Forum Feasa	S.—Subject ; singular ; Séadna.
FO.—Calendar of Oengus.	Ser.—Seánmóim i trí pício (O'L.).
FSÁ.—Finn scéalta na n-Áraibe.	Ss.—Sgót-Óualao (O'Leary).
G.—Genitive.	
S.—Suaire.	
Gr.—Greek.	

SMB.—Seacht mbuaidh an Eirge Amach.

TBB.—Tri Bior-Saoite an Dais (Keating).

TBC.—Táin Bó Cuailnge (O'L.).

Thurn.—Professor Thurneysen.

U.—Ulster. UP.—Ulster Proverb.

V.—Vocative. ZCP.—Zeitschrift fur Celtische Philologie.

The sign “ $\gamma$ ”=L. et, I. agus. <=reduced from.  
>=reduced to.

# GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

## PART I.

### PHONOLOGY.

I.—The mod. I. alphabet has 18 letters :—*a, e, i, o, u* (vowels) ; *b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t* (consonants). These 18 symbols have to represent 101 sounds. These sounds are :—

A.—Simple Vowels (24) :—1° *a, o, u, e, i* (short—*a, o, u* being broad, *e, i* being slender) ; the obscure vowel is represented by *ə* ; *a*, slightly different from *a*. 2° *á, ó, ú, é, í* ; *á* (long variety of last *a* in 1°). 3° *A, O, U, E, I* ; *a*—all nasal. 4° The modified vowels:—*á, a* (slender) ; *á* (broad *e*) ; *y* (broad *i*). 5° Ulster *ao=ú*, with unrounded lips.

II.—Exx. of the Simple Vowels :—1° *Captæn, sop, bun, eile, sm.* The 2nd syllable of *capaill* has the obscure vowel ; the 1st syllable, has “*a.*” 2° *tá, bó, cú, té, ti* ; *álum* (W'fd.). 3° *lám, cómgar, cumrá, séim, níme* ; *tá* (W'fd.). 4° *a Seám, ciseám, etc.* : *a Atair, geaitire* ; *caol, daol* ; *buide, gurde*. 5° *ao*.

III.—B.—Diphthongs (17) :—(a) Slurred :—1° *au* (nasal)—*samrað*. 2° *au*—*ann, datt* (M.). 3° *ou* (nasal)—*Domnað* (M.). 4° *ou*—*poll, gába* (M.). 5° *ay* (nasal)—*ainleas*. 6° *ay*—*cáinnit, ráðarc*. 7° *oy*—*doiminn*. 8° *ey*—*peðoma, geibead*. 9° *ei*—*Eiblin*. (b) Unslurred :—1° *ua*—*cuán, buán*. 2° *ue*—*cuain, buain*. 3° *ia*—*fíat, ciatl*. 4° *ie*—*riam, riám*. 5° *iá*—*sgéal, béal* (Parts of M.). 6° *ya*—*riagalta*. 7° *ye*—*riagail* (not preceded by art.). 8° *ia*—*fíadam* (2nd element, slender *a* short).

IV.—C.—The Consonants (60) :—The Consonants are divided according to :—(a) Point of articulation, into :—  
1. Labials. 2. Upper Dentals. 3. Lower Dentals.  
4. Hard Palatals. 5. Soft Palatals. 6. Chordal—the consonant “*h*,” of which there are three varieties.  
(b) Mode of articulation, into :—1° Stop consonants.  
2° Continuants. (c) Quality, into :—1. Broad, slender.  
2. Nasal, non-nasal. 3. Long, short. 4. Breath, voice.

V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants.

BROAD		Nasal		Slender			
Breath	Non-Nasal	Breath	Nasal	Non-Nasal	Nasal	Breath	Nasal
I. Labials:— Stop— Continuants— f, p, hW	v v, w, vw	hm m̄t̄ (f̄)	m̄ v̄, w̄, v̄w̄	p f̄ (p̄)	b v̄ (b̄, m̄)	hm m̄t̄	m̄ v̄ (m̄)
II. Upper Dentals:— Stops— C Cont.— h R	v { Contact between tongue and teeth }  R Approach of tip of tongue to teeth	hn tip of teeth }	n	c (Down-turned tip. Contact with blade of tongue) hR	o n l	hn { Approach of blade of tongue to teeth hL	n { Contact of blade of tongue with teeth
III. Lower Dentals:— Continuants— s, sh	z, zh	—	—	s, sh	z, zh	—	—
IV. Hard Palatals:— Stops— Continuants— c	—	—	—	c (s)	z̄ (o)	hnS	m̄
V. Soft Palatals— Stops— Cont.—c	S̄ (o)	hnS	—	—	—	—	—
VI. Chordals— h (č, š, ſ̄)	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
	hūn̄t̄ !			h (č, š, ſ̄) čífr̄, čuñ̄s, šín̄			

VI.—1° A vowel, diphthong or consonant is nasal, when the voice (or breath) used in its formation issues not only through the lips, but through the nasal cavity as well :—lám (a), Óomnac (ou), gnóta (n.).

2° A diphthong is broad or slender, or both, according to the nature of the component vowels. E.g., 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 (IIIa), 1, 6 (IIIb) are broad. 9 (IIIa), 4, 8 (IIIb) are slender ; 2, 7 (IIIb) are broad-slender ; 8 (IIIa), 3, 5 (IIIb) are slender-broad.

3° A breath-sound is one in the production of which the vocal chords are not vibrating. Most vowels are voiced, but the final vowel of the Holy Name, fosa, is often unvoiced. Every breath consonant contains a breath vowel, rendered consonantal by the explosion or the audible friction accompanying its production.

4° A stop consonant is one for the production of which the column of breath (or voice) must be stopped momentarily at a certain point. The opening is followed by a puff of air (voiced or unvoiced). Hence these consonants are sometimes called Plosives, or Explosives.

5° A continuant consonant is one in the production of which there is no such stoppage, but only an approach of certain parts of the vocal organs, sufficient to cause audible friction. When the friction is absent we get a vowel. Hence the difference between vowel and consonant is one of degree. Vowels may easily become (or develop) consonants :—Eg., the u- in uám is often “w” ; the v in ni vruair is a consonantal glide between i and u. So consonants may become vowels, or, in combination with vowels, develop diphthongs.—uṣṭo becomes ū ; pol, rāḍarc, develop diphthongs.

6° A stop consonant is momentary, and cannot be continued at will. The nasal hum which, in the case of m, n, ng, can be continued at will, is not a consonant at all, but the constituent vowel of the consonant. Cf. this vocalic hum with the frictional noise (consonantal) of, say, the English “th” in “though.” This frictional noise, can of course be continued as long as the breath lasts.

7° *m*, *n*, *n̄s* are not usually classified as stops. But as a complete oral stoppage is essential, we see no valid reason for excluding them from this category. *l* and *r*, are continuants, because, although an oral stoppage is required (see 8°) it is not complete, and the continuant element is consonantal, not (as in the case of *m*, *n*, *n̄s*) vocalic.

8° *l* and *r* are neither complete stops nor complete continuants. For “*l*” there is a stoppage at the front teeth, with an opening at the sides of the tongue ; for “*r*” there is a stoppage at the sides of the tongue, the opening being in front, between the tip (broad *r*) or the blade (slender *r*) of the tongue, and the roots or ivory of the upper teeth. “*l*,” is a lateral trill, “*r*” a frontal trill. The trill is more marked in “*r*” than in “*l*,” and more marked in broad “*r*” than in slender “*r*. ”

9° For all broad sounds the main body of the tongue is kept low in the mouth, and high for slender sounds.

10° The consonant “*nW*” (=wh in Eng. “what”) occurs in—*bá máit uait é Óéanamh*.

11° The consonant “*n*” :—(a) Unvoices a voiced consonant :—*tíomtā=tíopá*, *ámtac=apac*. (b) Gives up its natural quality (in M.) :—*ni cuisim* (*n*- slender) : *óróiceao* (*n*- broad) : *máit*, *cáit* (*n*- broad). (c) In the 2nd syll. *-ac* regularly attracts the accent (in M.). Not, however, if “*n*” intervenes :—*ceatac*, *bacac* : But—*ceatac*, *óleagtae*, etc.

12° Aspiration :—A single consonant between two vowels was aspirated :—(a) Initially :—*ceann an fír móir* : *an tsúil glas*. (b) Medially :—*teabar*, *fógnam* (<*po-gníom*). (c) Final :—*cáit*, *clúim*, *gnáit*, etc.

13° Dynamic Aspiration :—(a) *gán cos*—legless ; *gán cos*—without one particular leg. (b) *an céad sgéal*—the 1st story (Asp. irregular. Perhaps to distinguish from—*an céad sgéal*—the 100 stories). (c) *bean Seán*—S.’s wife (Regular, as *bean* orig. ended in a vowel). *mac Seán* (Irregular).

14° *n-* is used (where phonetically unjustified) :—  
 oo *n-orduigeadh*, oo *n-innseadh* : but—o'orduig sé,  
 o'mnis sé.

15° Loss of Aspiration:—crot: crut; the init. const. of Auton. vbs. often resists asp.—Ni mar a braittear a bitear—Things are not what they seem.

16° Eclipsis :—(a) Initial :—óða ótrian—two thirds (trian orig. neut.) ; Slab scua (slab, neut. s- stem, but eclipses on anal. of neut. o- and n- stems ; Óðl scáis (ðl orig. neuter). The final nasal which causes initial eclipsis appears as :—1. *n-* before a vowel—ceol na n-ean. 2. *m-* before b—ar an mbórd. 3. *b-* before p—ar an bpórt. 4. *v-* before f—ar an bfrummeoig. 5. *n-* before o—óunað na noírse. 6. *o-* before t—ar an ótalam. 7. *s-* before c—torad na scrann. 8. *n* (=ns) before s—Clann na nSæðeal. Sometimes initial s, sh are eclipsed giving z, zh :—le saoigéil na saoigéil (=zaol); tig na sagart (=zagart); an surfá? an sínpá? Eclipsis, therefore, practically means the voicing of a breath consonant, or the nasalizing of a voiced one.

(b) Medial :—Coigead, coigear, coigus (in these only the resultant sound is written). In coiscrioc, eagscoir, eaotrom, and many others, the eclipsed consonant also appears. Sometimes eclipsing *n-* and the resultant sound are both written :—comblioct, naonbar, deicniubar (in the last two -v- is the eclipsed f- of fear). In some borrowed words s, o, appear medially for c, t :—Cuigean (L. coquina), sagart (L. sacerdos), Novela (L. Natalicia), eagsais (Ecclesia), seagat (secale). In saoigéil (L. saeculum), -s- because of assonance, in poetry, with baoigéil. No, med. and final >nn :—beannact (O.I. berdacht), Aifreann, etc.

(c) Final Eclipsis :—Céad (<cent-), 100 ; céad (<cintu-), first ; véad (<dent-) ; formad (<forment-), envy ; brígrí, cùis, véas, etc. Sometimes final t>o :—aicí, disease (<L. accidit) ; cead, permission (<L. li-cet) ; lri, Shrovetide (<L. initium) ; Trionóra (<L. Trinitatem). When an eclipsing word ends now with the sound “n,” the latter unvoices

the following initial (already voiced by eclipsis), so that the eclipsis is nullified :—*deic cinn, seact tiothlaictí an Spioraidh Naoimh* (seact here follows *deic*). In :—*deic mbliana*, “*ml*” is unvoiced.

(d) Dynamic Eclipsis :—Eclipsis, like Aspiration, is sometimes contrary to phonetic law, and the sg. n. is then used dynamically (as in *tri capall*, on the analogy of *tri céad*) :—

TRÍ TÉADÁ BÁ VINN, TRÍ CRÉACTA SA TÍR,  
TRÍ NAOMH-LEIMB NAOMHTA TUSS SÉAR-SÉARC DO CRIOST ;  
A DTRÍ MBÉAL, A DTRÍ SCRORÓE, A DTRÍ SAOR-CORP FÁLIS,  
A DTRÍ N-EADAN BÁ SLEIGEAL AS DAOLAIIB IS DÍT  
(A. O'R. 46)—

Three melodious strings, three glens in the earth,  
Three sainted, holy children who fondly loved Christ,  
Their three mouths, their three hearts, their three noble  
bodies beneath a stone, Their three fair, bright foreheads  
the prey of chafers—it is ruin !

## PART II.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE ARTICLE (1—7).

1.—There is no indefinite article in Irish. The definite article is declined thus :—

	Singular.	
M.		F.
N.A. before vowel		N.A.D. (before vowels)
G.   ,,   s-	$\{\Delta n\}$ $\tau-$	$\{\Delta n^c$
		and consonants other than s—
All other cases :—	$\Delta n$	N.A. (before s—) $\Delta n \tau-$
		G. (before consonants) $\Delta n$
		(   ,,   vowels) $\Delta n \Delta n-$

#### Plural.

N.A.D. (before consonants) :	$\Delta n$
(   ,,   vowels) :	$\Delta n \Delta n-$
G. (before consonants) :	$\Delta n \Delta n$
(   ,,   vowels) :	$\Delta n \Delta n-$

#### Dual.

M. and F. (in all cases) :— $\Delta n$ .

Examples :—M. sg.— $\Delta n$   $\tau$ ear so, this man ;  $\Delta n'$   $\tau$ ear so, to this man ;  $\Delta n$   $\tau$ - $\Delta tair$  p. O Lao $\bar{s}$ aire, Fr. P. O'Leary ;  $\Delta n$   $\tau$ - $\Delta rán$  so  $\Delta n$  beat $\Delta \theta$ , this Bread of Life ; ceann  $\Delta n$   $\tau$ ir seo, this man's head ; teabair  $\Delta n$   $\Delta tair$  p. O Lao $\bar{s}$ aire, Fr. P. O'Leary's books ;  $\Delta n$   $\tau$ sola $\bar{s}$ , (the) brightness of the light.

F. sg.—*Tá an óróis sán briste*, that thumb is broken ; *tá an bean so breoite*, this woman is sick ; *an tsúil deas atá tim* (it is) the right eye that is sore ; *tá fear na mná sán ar buile*, that woman's husband is mad ; *bárr na h-óróise* (the) top of the thumb.

Pl. M. and F.—*ná fir seo*, these men ; *ná h-óróise sán*, those thumbs ; *Cumann na mBán*, the women's Association ; *ceol ná n-éan*, the music of the birds,

Dual.—*An tár sagart uo*, those two priests (taken separately) ; *an tár Aspal téag*, the twelve Apostles ; *an tár bróis seo*, these two shoes.

2.—The article was originally an adjective formed from the two demonstratives, *sín* (*sán*) and *to* (*tá*). (Cf. Lat. *is-tum*, *is-tam*). *To-* and *ta-* being, in the article, pretonic, appeared at first as *oo-*, *oa-*. After prepositions which originally ended in a consonant, the initial *s-* of the article appears, but is usually written with the preposition. E.g.—*as an*, *as na* ; *ins an*, *ins na* ; *teis an*, *teis na* ; *táir san at*, over the ford (but frequently lost here—nearly always in the Pl.—*táir na beartaib*). Also this *s-* appears after *oo* and *oe* (with the Pl.), *so*, *to* (in certain phrases), *o* (in Pl.) and *tré*. Thus :—*oo sna Daoine sín*, to those persons ; *gus an lá iniu*, until to-day. Especially in such phrases as :—*seachtain is lá iniu*, this day week ; *trés an mbíte sútam*, through life everlasting. Instead of *trés an*, Munster Irish uses *trio an* ; but *tré sna* in the Pl.

### 3.—The article *aspirates* :—

(a) N.A. sg. F.—This is phonetically irregular in the A., which follows the N. in modern Irish. *O* and *t* resist this aspiration in both cases. E.g.—*an dún sín*, that desire ; *an Toil*, Will ; *an Tuisint*, Intelligence.

(b) D. sg. of all genders—but not always. Many irregularities arise from the widespread confusion of D. and A., after prepositions which originally governed both cases. *Ar an bóro*, on the table (properly D., but used in U. for A. as well). *Ar an mbóro* (properly A., but used in M. for D. as well). Thus, *tá sé ar an bóro* (*rest*) would

be right according to the old distinction ; but *oo cait* *sé anuas ar an mbóro é* (*motion*).

(c) G. sg. M.—*níl leigear te fágáil ac leigear an báis*, the only remedy is that of death. *O* and *t* resist aspiration. *Tigearna an tainim*, the landlord ; *beata an duine*, Man's life.

(d) The form *an t-* is always due to an aspirated s :—

1°. In *an t-achair*, *an t-úrlár*, *an t-arán*, the father, the floor, the bread (N. sg. M.), the *t-* is due to the aspiration of the final -s of *the article* itself ; *s=h*, which, acting on the *-o-* of the article, changed it into *t-* (\**sindos athir*). In mod. I. the A. follows the N.

2°. In *an tsagairt*, of the priest (G. sg. M.), and *an tsúil*, the eye (N. sg. F.) *t-* comes from *o-* of the article under the influence of the aspirated s- of *the noun*. (\**Sindi shagairt*; \**sinda shúlis*). The s in these cases is aspirated, though undotted. It is better not to say that the article *prefixes t-* to the noun. The *t-* is an integral part of the article itself.

#### 4.—The article *eclipses* :—

(a) G. Pl.—*Ceol na n-éan* (*n-* before vowels), the birds' music ; *cúr na bpear le céile*, uniting the men.

(b) Eclipsis in the sg. after prepositions which originally governed an A. still remains to some extent, but has been disturbed considerably. (See 3 (b) above).

#### 5.—The article, before vowels, appears as *na h-*

(a) In G. sg. F.—*i láir na h-oróce*, in the middle of the night. The *h-* is due to the aspiration of final -s of the article, which, in G. sg. F. was \**sindas* (..*innah-*, *na h-*).

(b) In N.A.D. pl.—(Irregular in M., *na h-éisg*, the fishes=O.I. ind *éisg*. Irregular also in D. pl.—*oo sná h-éinínib*, to the little birds).

6.—The only extant use of the neuter sg. article is what is now called the compound relative. E.g., *a*

n-órtúigeann sé d'úinn, the (thing which) he orders us  
(all that he orders us).

7.—Two other notable survivals of special forms of the article are :—

- (a) *An té*, he who, they who (..O.I. int-i, N.sg. M. of the article, with the deictic particle -i, seen in Gk. houtos-i; Lat. qui..quo-i).
- (b) The noun *ní*, thing, developed partly from O.I. an-i (Neut. of int-i), that which, the thing which ; and partly from *ni*, the Neut. of O.I. nech=anyone.

The word *té* is now an indeclinable noun, and can be used either of an individual or of a class ; as also of either gender.

“ *An té bionn síos buailtear cos aír,*  
  *An té bionn suas óltar doeoí aír.* ” (Proverb).

(They who are down are trodden under foot, they who are successful are toasted.)

## CHAPTER II.

### THE NOUN (8—76).

8.—For the purposes of Declension, Nouns are divided according to the ending of the stem, which may either be vocalic or consonantal. Hence we arrive at the following scheme, which, however, has been much disturbed, owing to the confusion of different types :—

First Decl.	Second Decl.	Third Decl.	Fourth Decl.	Fifth Decl.
O- stems.	Α- stems	I and U- stems.	Io- and iα- stems.	Consonantal stems.

9.—There were three genders in O.I., but the Neuter has to a great extent fallen into disuse. Nouns are now generally reckoned as M. or F.

### FIRST DECLENSION.

10.—All the nouns of this declension are now M., and all end, in N. sg., in a broad consonant, except ΣΑ, spear (11), and ΟΙΑ, God (15).

11.—The Voc. sg., and pl., is preceded by the particle Α. There are five cases—Nom., Gen., Dat., Acc., Voc. In modern Irish the Acc., in most instances, has the same form as the Nom. Examples :—

பெர, a man. Sg.—D.A.N.—பெர. V.G. பீர.

சௌம், head. „ „ சௌம். „, சிம். (D. often சின்).

ஸ்தால், story (originally Neut.)—D.A.N.—ஸ்தால். V.G. ஸ்தீல்—So :—என், bird ; நீல், cloud ; பெர், grass. Genitive—எய், நீல், பீர்.

**pott**, hair.—Sg. D.A.N. *polt*. V.G. *punt*. So :—  
cnoc, hill ; son, sound ; pott, hole ; tor, bush.  
V.G. *cnuic*, *suin*, *puill*, *tuir*.

**iasc**, fish. Sg. D.A.N.—*iasc*. V.G. *éisc*. But *rian*,  
track (G. *riam*) ; *srian*, bridle (G. *sriam*) ; *brían*,  
*Brian* (G. *bríam*) ; *biað*, food (G. *bið*) ; *diabál*,  
devil (G. *diabail*).

**leastar**, cask, helpless person.—Sg.—D.A.N. *leastar*.  
V.G. *leastair*. So :—*clarðeám*, sword ; *solas*,  
light ; *sólás*, consolation ; *aingeal*, angel ; *bótar*,  
road. V.G.—*clarðim*, *solais*, *sólás*, *aingil*, *bótair*.

Nouns ending in -ac, -eac have -ais, -is in V.G. Thus:—

**uatac**, burden. Sg. D.A.N.—*uatac*. V.G. *uatais*.  
So :—*aonac*, fair ; *muillac*, summit ; *beatac*, path ;  
*éadaç*, cloth ; *órlac*, inch. V.G.—*aonais*, *muillais*,  
*beatais*, *éadais*, *órlais*.

**sa**, spear, dart, sting, beam, belongs to this declension.  
G. *sa*, *sae*, *saoi*. N.A. pl. *saoi*, *sæte*, *saoite*.  
G. pl. *sat*, *sæte*. D. pl. *saoib*, *sætib*.

**coiteac**, cock.—Sg. D.A.N. *coiteac*. V.G. *coitis*.  
So :—*mairtineac*, cripple. V.G. *mairtinis*.

**mac**, son. Sg. D.A.N.—*mac*, V.G. *mic* (O.I. *maic* ;  
mid. I. *meic*).

**teanb**, child. Sg. D.A.N.—*teanb*, V.G. *teimb*.

### Plural.

12.—	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>fear</b> .—	<i>fir</i>	<i>fear</i>	<i>fearaiib</i>	A <i>feara</i>
<b>Ceann</b>	<i>cinn</i>	<i>ceann</i>	<i>ceannaiib</i>	A <i>ceanna</i>
<b>Scéal</b>	<i>scéala</i>	<i>scéal</i>	<i>scéalaib</i>	A <i>scéala</i>
<b>polt</b> .—	<i>puit</i>	<i>polt</i>	<i>poltaib</i>	A <i>pulta</i>
<b>iasc</b> .—	<i>éisc</i>	<i>iasc</i>	<i>iascaib</i>	A <i>iasca</i>
<b>leastar</b> .—	<i>leastair</i>	<i>leastar</i>	<i>leastraiib</i>	A <i>leastrá</i>
<b>clarðeám</b> .—	<i>clarðente</i>	<i>clarðeám</i>	<i>clarðmtib</i>	A <i>clarðente</i>
<b>Solas</b> .—	<i>soillse</i>	<i>soillse</i>	<i>soillsib</i>	A <i>soillse</i>
<b>Sólás</b> .—	<i>sólás</i>	<i>sólás</i>	<i>sólásaiib</i>	A <i>sólasa</i>
<b>Aingeal</b> .—	<i>aingle</i>	<i>aingeal</i>	<i>ainglib</i>	A <i>aingle</i>
<b>bótar</b> .—	<i>bóitre</i>	<i>bótar</i>	<i>bóitrib</i>	(A <i>bóitre</i> )

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
úalač.—	úalaíse	úalač	úalaíſib	a úalaíse
áonač.—	áonaíse	áonač	áonaíſib	(a áonaíse)
bealač.—	bealaíse	bealač	bealaíſib	(a bealaíse)
éadač.—	éadaíse	éadač	éadaíſib	(a éadaíse)
órlač.—	órlaíse	órlač	órlaíſib	(a órlaíse)
coileač.—	coilis	coileač	coileačaiſib	a coileaca
mac.—	mic	mac	macaiſib	a maca
leanb.—	leanbái	leanb	leanbáſib	a leanbái

13.—Note.—Scéala, news ; scéalta, stories ; cláromte, soillse, aingle, bóitre ; úalaíse, áonaíse, bealaíse, éadaíse, órlaíse ; mic, leanbái.

14.—Úalač, áonač, bealač, éadač, órlač form their pl. in -aíſe under the influence of teac, a Neut. s- stem. O.I. pl. tige. Forms enclosed within brackets (12) occur only rarely.

15.—N.B.—Óia, God, belongs to this declension. (Lat.—deus, dívus). G. sg.—Óé. V.—a Óia. Pl.—óeite.

16.—Many nouns which originally belonged to this declension have passed into others :—Scát, shadow ; urcórð, harm ; aois, age ; trian, a third ; seorð, seorð, jewel. G. now—scáta (3rd), urcórðe (2nd), aoise (2nd), triana (3rd), seorð (1st), seorðe (2nd), seora (3rd). Óearman, demon, has N.A. pl. óearma (O.I. demn(a)e) owing to Lat. daemonia (*Thurn.*). But óearm also occurs in mod. I.

17.—The Dual :—Used after óá, two. It is (with rare exceptions) the same in form as the D. sg., and does not change for case. E.g., óá fíar, two men. Óá aspirates.—Óá ceann, iasc, leastar, cláromt, sólas, bótar, ȝrl. The G. pl. is sometimes used as G. Dual :—lán oo óá súl, the full of your two eyes (Súl is 2nd and 3rd declension).

18.—Many nouns in -að, owing to the loss (in speech) of the final -ð, pass into the 4th declension in the pl. Thus :—iongna(ð), wonder ; madra(ð), dog ; slabra(ð),

chain ; *marga*(*ó*), bargain, market. Pl.—*iongnai*, *madraí*, *slabraí*, *margai*. Note the pl.—*dóirse* (*doras*, door), *eigse* (*eigear*, learned man).

19.—Plurals in *-a* :—*caor*, berry ; *teor*, tear ; *focal*, word ; *fiac*, debt ; *bruac*, brink ; *sceal*, story ; *meacan*, parsnip ; *peann*, pen ; *seod*, jewel ; *slán*, surety. Pl.—*caora*, *teora*, *focla* (also *focail*), *fiaca*, *bruaca*, *sceala* (news), *meacna*, *peanna* (also *pinn*), *seoda* (see 16), *slána*.

20.—Plurals in *-ta*, *-tā* :—*ceot*, music ; *ván*, poem ; *vún*, fort ; *néat*, cloud ; *seot*, sail ; *cogað*, war ; *cuan*, harbour ; *céad*, hundred ; *sceal*, story ; *tion*, net. Pl. *ceolta*, *vánta*, *vúnta*, *néalta*, *seolta*, *cogta*, *cuanta*, *céadta* (but *céad* after numerals :—*tri céad*, *seacht céad*, 300, 700), *scealta* (but *sceala*=news), *tionta*. *Cogað* comes from *cat*, battle (*u-* stem) with the prep. *con-* prefixed.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

21.—All nouns of this declension end, in N. sg., in a broad or slender consonant. All are F.—

		V.A.N.	G.	D.
<i>Cos</i> ,	foot.—	<i>cos</i>	<i>coise</i>	<i>cois</i>
<i>Brós</i> ,	shoe.—	<i>brós</i>	<i>bróise</i>	<i>bróis</i>
<i>long</i> ,	ship	<i>long</i>	<i>lumge</i>	<i>lums</i>
<i>Clann</i> ,	children.—	<i>clann</i>	<i>claimne</i>	<i>clann</i>
<i>Srian</i> ,	sun.—	<i>srian</i>	<i>gréime</i>	<i>gréim</i>
<i>pian</i> ,	pain.—	<i>pian</i>	<i>péime</i>	<i>pém</i>
<i>scian</i> ,	knife.—	<i>scian</i>	<i>scime</i>	<i>scim</i> ( <i>sciam</i> )
<i>Ciall</i> ,	sense.—	<i>ciall</i>	<i>céille</i>	<i>céill</i>
<i>Séas</i> ,	branch.—	<i>seas</i>	<i>géise</i>	<i>géis</i>
<i>fréam</i> ,	root	<i>fréam</i>	<i>fréime</i>	<i>fréim</i>
<i>spéar</i> ,	sky.—	<i>spéar</i>	<i>spéire</i>	<i>spéir.</i>

22.—

<i>lit</i> ,	lily.—	<i>lit</i>	<i>lite</i>	<i>lit</i>
<i>luib</i> ,	herb.—	<i>luib</i>	<i>luibe</i>	<i>luib</i>
<i>Duaís</i> ,	prize.—	<i>duais</i>	<i>duaise</i>	<i>duais</i>
<i>áit</i> ,	place.—	<i>áit</i>	<i>áite</i>	<i>áit.</i>

23.—Nouns in **-eac**, **-ac**, have **-ise**, **-ais** in G., and **-is**, **-ais** in D.—

	V.A.N.	G.	D.
Caitteac, hag.—	caitteac	caitlige	caillis
blátač, buttermilk.—	blátač	blátaise	blátais
latač, mud, mire.—	latač	lataise	latais.

But note the monosyllabic nouns :—

beac, bee.—	V.A.N. beac.	G. beice.	D. beic
Sceač, briar.—	„ sceac	„ sceice	„ sceic
Creac, plunder.—	„ creac	„ creice	„ creic

24.—Syncope often takes place in G.sg.—burðean, company ; bruīscean, palace. G.—burðone, bruīsne.

Deoč, drink.—	V.A.N. deoč.	G. ðiſe	D. ðiſ
muc, pig.—	„ muc	„ muice	„ muic

26.—Só, lie, deceit (now 4th declension, G. só) originally belonged to this declension (O.I. G. sg., gue). Tóit, will (G. now tóile, tota. O.I. G. tuile) ; Sábáil (and all verbals in -áil), O.I. gabál, G. -ae, now G. -a (3rd) ; pearsa (G. now -n (5th), originally N. persan, G. persine (L. persona) ; litir (orig. á- stem, L. litera), G. now litre, litread, Pl. litre, litreada (due to K-stems).

### 27.—

#### Plural.

N.A.	G.	D.	V.
Cos, foot.—cosa	cos	cosaib	a cosa
brós.—	brósa	brósai	a brósa
long.—	longa	longai	a longa
clann.—	clanna	clannai	a clanna
ſrian.—	ſriana	ſrianaib	a ſrians
pian.—	pianta	piantai	a pianta
scian.—	sciana	sceanaib	a sceana
ciatl.—	—	—	—
ſéas.—	ſéasa	ſéasai	a ſéasa
fréam.—	fréama(ča)	fréam(áča)	a fréamáča
spéar.—	spéarta	spéartai	a spéarta
lit.—	lit	litib	a lit

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
<b>Lúib.</b> —	lúibeanna	lúibeann(a)	lúibeannai <b>b</b>	a lúibeanna
<b>Duaís.</b> —	duaiseanna	duaiseann(a)	duaiseannai <b>b</b>	a duaiseanna
<b>Áit.</b> —	áiteanna(-aca)	áiteann	áiteannai <b>b</b>	a áiteanna
<b>Cailleac.</b> —	cailleaca	cailleac	cailleacai <b>b</b>	a cailleaca
<b>Beac.</b> —	beaca	beac	beacai <b>b</b>	a beaca
<b>Sceaċ.</b> —	sceaċa	sceaċ	sceaċai <b>b</b>	a sceacā
<b>Creac.</b> —	creacā	creac	creacai <b>b</b>	a creacā
<b>Deoc.</b> —	deoċa	deoċ	deoċai <b>b</b>	a deoċa
<b>Muc.</b> —	mucā	muc	mucai <b>b</b>	a mucā.

28.—The Dual.—(Same in form, in all cases, as D. sg.).  
 (An t) cōis, bróis, lúim, céim, geis, fréim, spéir, til, lúib, duaís, áit, caillis, beic, sceic, creic, vis, muc.

29.—**Bean**, a woman.—N.A. pl.—mn. G. ban. D. mnai**b**. V. a mn. N.B.—This noun, and the F. of the article are the only a- stems that follow the original declension. The G. sg. in -e in the 2nd declension is irregular.

30.—Note the *strong* plurals in -anna, -aca :—

Cúis, cause (cúiseanna) ; bim, stroke (bimeanna) ; gluais, contrivance (gluaiseanna) ; veil, lathe (veileanna) ; léim, leap (léimeanna) ; scoil, school (scoileanna) ; céim, step (céimeanna) ; feis, festival (feiseanna) ; sro, street (srardeanna) ; páirc, field (pairceanna) ; uair, hour, time (uaireannta, uaireanna) ; of these, bim, céim, léim, réim, were nn-stems, and belong by right to the 5th declension. Scoil, scoil, has also a pl. scottaca (U.).

31.—Plurals in -aca, -eaca :—

litir, letter ; obair, work ; paroir, prayer ; óráo, speech ; ub, egg ; ciúmais, edge ; truait, scabbard ; teac, stone ; coistri  s, fortnight ; aib  , habit, costume.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

32.—This declension includes :—

(a) M. nouns in -ir, -oir, -dir, -ir, -neoir :—  
 bodir, boatman ; fseadir, weaver ; doctir, doctor ;  
 tailliir, tailor ; scribneoir, writer,

(b) Abstracts, Collectives, and others, in **-aċt**. All F. except **fuact**, cold, M. and monosyllabic nouns like **ceact**, lesson; **céact**, plough; **tract**, river bank; **react**, statute. **Taċt**, coming, and **vanntract**, women-folk, are M. and F.

(c) Other nouns ending in consonants (M. or F., as a rule, according as the final consonant is broad or slender). Names of males, however, are M.—**laiġ**, physician, surgeon.

**33.**—I- stems in O.I. (as in Lat.) were M., F. or Neuter. U- stems (as in Lat.) were M. or Neuter.

### EXAMPLES.

**34 (a).**—

<b>bádóir</b> —N.A.V.D.	<b>bádóir</b>	G. <b>bádóra</b> .
<b>riġeadoir</b>	„	<b>riġeadoir</b> „, <b>riġeadora</b>
<b>doċtúir</b> —	„	<b>doċtúir</b> „, <b>doċtúra</b>
<b>tálliúir</b> —	„	<b>tálliúir</b> „, <b>tálliúra</b>
<b>scríbneoir</b> —	„	<b>scríbneoir</b> „, <b>scríbneora</b>

**35 (b).**—

<b>beannaċt</b> —N.A.V.D.	<b>beannaċt</b>	G. <b>beannaċta</b>
<b>mallaċt</b> —	„	<b>mallaċt</b> „, <b>mallaċta</b>
<b>fuact</b> —	„	<b>fuact</b> „, <b>fuacta</b> .

**36 (c).**—

<b>cnáṁ</b> , bone (M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>cnáṁ</b> G. <b>cnáma</b>
<b>sníom</b> , deed (M)	„	<b>sníom</b> „, <b>sníoma</b>
<b>rud</b> , thing (M)	„	<b>rud</b> „, <b>ruda</b>
<b>reann</b> , star (M)	„	<b>reann</b> „, <b>reanna</b> .

**37 (d).**—

<b>fuil</b> , blood (F)	N.A.V.D.	<b>fuil</b> G. <b>fola</b>
<b>peoīl</b> , flesh (F)	„	<b>peoīl</b> „, <b>peola</b>
<b>táin</b> , multitude (F)	„	<b>táin</b> „, <b>tána</b>
<b>muīr</b> , sea (M.F.)	„	<b>muīr</b> „, <b>mara</b> (orig. Neuter)
<b>laiġ</b> , physician (M)	„	<b>laiġ</b> „, <b>leasa</b> .

## 38.—

<b>bit</b> ,	world	(M)	N.A.V.D.	<b>bit</b>	G. <i>beata</i>
<b>fios</b> ,	knowledge	(M)	,,	<b>fios</b>	,, <i>feasa</i>
<b>lios</b> ,	fort	(M)	,,	<b>lios</b>	,, <i>leasa</i>
<b>leas</b> ,	improvement	(M)	,,	<b>leas</b>	,, <i>leasa</i>
<b>cit</b> ,	shower	(M)	,,	<b>cit</b>	,, <i>ceata</i>
<b>cuid</b> ,	share	(F)	,,	<b>curo</b>	,, <i>coda</i>
<b>crios</b> ,	girdle	(M)	,,	<b>crios</b>	,, <i>creasa</i>
<b>druim</b> ,	back	(M)	,,	<b>druim</b>	,, <i>droma</i>
<b>drom</b> ,	human back	(M)	,,	<b>drom</b>	,, <i>droma</i>
<b>rit</b> ,	running	(F)	,,	<b>rit</b>	,, <i>reata</i>
<b>fiod</b> ,	tree, wood	(M)	,,	<b>fiod</b>	,, <i>feaða</i> .

39.—**cro** (G. *id.* F.), gore, blood, death (O.I. *crú*, G. *cró*) ; and **cnó**, nut, M. or F. (G. *id.*, Pl. *cná*, *cnóite* ; O.I. *cnú*, G. *cnó*, F.) belong to this declension, the ending being obscured by the long vowel.

## 40.—Changes :—

**frais**, F., rafters (O.I. G. *frega*, wall, partition). G. now *fraise*. Pl. *fragtaca*.

**grais**, F., stud of horses (O.I. G. *grega*). G. now *graise*.

**tailm**, F., sling (O.I. G. *telma*). G. now *tailme*. Pl. *tailmeaca*.

**dorus**, M., door (O.I. Neut. G. *doirseo*). G. now *doruis*. Pl. *dóirse*.

**amus**, M., hit, etc. (O.I. G. *aimseo*). G. now *amuis*.

**tómus**, M., guess, riddle (<\*to-fo-mess. O.I. G. *toimseo*, now *tómuis*).

**lion**, M., number, etc. (O.I. G. *lina*, now *lin*).

41.—**gníomarca**, used as N. pl. of **gníom**, is really the pl. of **gníomrað** (Collective), deeds. Cf. *connarca*, compacts, covenants, pl. of *connrað*.

## Plural.

<b>42.—</b>	<b>bádóir</b>	<b>físeadóir</b>	<b>doctúir</b>	<b>scribneoir</b>
V.A.N.G.	bádóiri	físeadóiri	doctúiri	scribneoiri
D.	bádóirib	físeadóirib	doctúirib	scribneoirib

43.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>Beannacht.</b> —beannacht	beannacht	beannacht	beannachtai <b>b</b>
<b>Mallacht.</b> —mallacht	mallacht	mallacht	mallachtai <b>b</b>
<b>Cnám.</b> —cnáma	cnám	cnám	cnámai <b>b</b>
<b>Sníom.</b> —sniomartha	sniomartha	sniomartha	sniomartha <b>ib</b>
<b>Rud.</b> —rudai	rudai	rudai	rudai <b>b</b>
<b>Reann.</b> —reanna	reann	reann	reanna <b>ib</b>

44.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>Táin.</b> —táinte	táinte	táinte	táint <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Muir.</b> —muire	muire	muir	muir <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Liaís.</b> —leasa	leasa	liaís	leasa <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Lios.</b> —leasa	leasa	lios	leasa <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Cit.</b> —ceatana	ceatana	ceatana	ceatana <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Cuid.</b> —codača	codača	codača	codača <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Críos</b>	creasa	críos	creasa <b>i</b> <b>b</b>
<b>Druim (drom)</b>	dromanna	dromanna	dromanna <b>i</b> <b>b</b>

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

45.—This includes :—

- (a) Personal nouns in —arde (—urrde), —aire (—irre), —all M.
- (b) Diminutives in —in. All M.— Originally o— stems (1st declension).
- (c) Abstracts in —e, formed from adjectives. All F. nowadays.
- (d) All nouns ending in vowels, except Oia, sa (1st decl.) ; cró, cnó (3rd decl.), and those which belong to the 5th decl. (consonantal stems).
- (e) Note especially that iā, day (G. iae, Poet. iaoi, D. iā, iō) and ū, ua, grandson (V.G. ui, N.A. pl. ui) belong to this declension, and are the *only nouns that preserve traces, in the sg., of the original inflections.*

## EXAMPLES.

Singular.

- 46.—(a) **Sadairde**, thief, M. **Teactaire**, messenger, M.  
 (b) **Cailín**, girl, M. **Báidín**, little boat. M.

(c) **Déine**, ardour, intensity, F. **óige**, youth. F.

(d) **Croíde**, heart, M. **Duine**, person, M. **fiafónaise**, testimony, F. **Oidcē**, night, F. **Aitne**, acquaintance, F. **Ré**, life, time, space, F.

**47.**—All the nouns in these classes (46) are *the same in all cases in the sg.*,—except with regard to aspiration and eclipsis. **lá** and **ó** are inflected as indicated in 45 (e).

### Plural.

**Sádairé**.—V.A.N.G.—**sádairé**. D.—**sádairib**. So all nouns with this termination, and others ending in —**de**, —**se**, e.g., **croíde**, heart, **ríse**, forearm. Pl.—**croírte**, **rísste**.

**Teactaire**.—V.A.N.G.—**teactairí**. D.—**teactairib**. So **teactairí**, etc.

**Cailín**.—V.A.N.G.—**cailini**. D.—**cailinib**. So all nouns in —**in**.

**Déine**, **ré**.—These abstracts are not used in the pl.

**Duine**.—V.A.N.G.—**duome**. D.—**duomib**.

**Oidcē**.—V.A.N.G.—**oróceanta** (following **laeteanta**, pl. of **lá**, day). Also **oróci**, and (in Donegal) —**anna**.

**Aitne**, commandment—V.A.N.G.—**aiteanta**. D.—**aiteantaiib**.

**Ré**.—V.A.N.G.—**réite**. D.—**réitib**.

**Reite**, ram.—V.A.N.G.—**reiti**. D.—**reitib**.

**Lá**.—V.A.N.G.—**laete**, **láite**, **laeteanta**. D.—**laetib**, **láitib**, **laeteantaiib**.

**Ó**, **ua**.—V.A.N.—**uī**. G.—**ó**, **ua**. D.—**uib** (often used for N. in place names, e.g., **Uib Laoighaire**).

**49.**—Plurals in —**te** :—In addition to the nouns specified in 48 (under **sádairé**) the following add —**te** :—  
**Caoi**, way, etc. F. ; **ðaoi**, fool, M. ; **draoi**, druid, M. ;  
**blaoi**, curl, F. ; **laoi**, lay, F. ; **finné**, witness, M. ;  
**mile**, thousand, mile, M. (but after numerals the pl. is  
**mile**,—O.I. **mili**—**tri mile**, **seacht mile**, 3,000, 7,000) ;

ré, life, F. ; ní, thing, M. ; saoí, sage, M. Of these daoí, saoí, draoí are properly consonantal stems. Plurals :—caoite, daoite, draoite, dloite, laoite, finnête, milte, réite, neite (nróite), saoite.

50.—Plurals in —te :—téine, shirt, F., baile, town, M., stóinne, surname, M., teine, fire, F., cùinne, corner, M. Pl.—téinte (also téinteacha), bailté (also bailtí, baileachá), stóinnte, teinte (also teinteacha), cùinnte (also cùinní).

51.—múille, mule, M.—Pl.—múilli, múilte.

Snó, work, M.—Pl.—snócta, snóctai.

Uinge, ounce, ingot, F.—Pl.—uingeaca.

easná, rib, lath, F.—Pl.—easnái, easnaca, easnardeaca.

### FIFTH DECLENSION.

52.—We have in Irish stems ending in :—1° t- or d-. 2° c-. 3° s-. 4° n-. 5° nn-. 6° -nt (>d). 7° r. 8° -s.

In 1°—6°, the characteristic consonant of the stem disappears in the N. sg. (except in dáo, tooth, teeth), but generally reappears in the G. sg., so that we have the syllables -dó, -dó, -s (rios), -an, -ann, -dó (from -ant), serving in mod. I. as G. endings. The original G. ending is lost. In 7° the characteristic consonant (-r) appears in all the cases ; while in 8°, it (-s) disappears in all (except mí, month, G. miosa. Here it is preserved by the originally preceding -n).

#### T. and D. Stems.

#### Singular.

53.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
Teangsá, tongue, F.—	teangsá	teangsád	teangsáid
Sleo, strife, noise, M.—	sleo	sliaod	sliaid
Saoí, sage, M.—	saoí	suaod	saoí
Draoí, druid, magician, M.—draoí	druaod	draoí	
Cré, earth, dust, clay, F.—cré	criad	criairí	
Dé, spark, dust, smoke, F.—dé	diao	diaid	

G. now mostly *deíte*. 1 *nóeire* na *deíte*—at the point of death.

**Cion**, sin, fault, M. and F.—V.A.N. *cion*. G. *cionad*. D. *cionard*.

54.—Many of these stems have passed over to the 4th declension :—*Teange*, *teime*, *file*, *téine*. *Trois*, foot, F., has now G. in -e, or -te. All these nouns show the original nature of the stem in the pl., where the dental appears:—*teangtaca*, *teimte*, *fili* (from *fileada*), *téimteaca*, *trois*. *Mile*, soldier, orig. G. *milead* (Lat. miles, milit-is) has now passed over to the 1st decl. N.—*milead*, G. *milio*.

### C (K-) Stems.

55.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
<b>CATÁIR</b> , city, F.	CATÁIR	CATRAC	CATAIR (CATRAIS)
<b>NÁTÁIR</b> , snake, F.	NÁTÁIR	NÁTRAC	NATAIR (NATRAIS)
<b>CRÁIN</b> , female, sow, F.	CRÁIN	CRÁNAC	CRÁIM (CRÁNAIS)
<b>CAORA</b> , sheep, ewe, F.	CAORA	CAORAC	CAORA (CAOIRIS)
<b>SAIL</b> , willow, beam, F.	SAIL	SALAC	SAIL (SAILIS)
<b>Ceo</b> , mist, M.	CEO	CIAC	now ceo (ceois)

56.—Many nouns not originally belonging to this declension have been attracted to it, especially in the pl. Thus :—*Oair*, oak, F., has G. sg. *oaire*, *oarac*, *oaraige*; *Teamair*, Tara, G. *Teamrac* (O.I.G. Temro); *cataoir*, chair, G. *cataoireac* (A. pl. in P.H. p. 163 *cathaire*) ; *aill*, cliff, F. (G. *aile*) has pl. *ailltreaca*, as well as *aile*; so *atair*, *mátair*, *brátair*, *triotaír*, *siúr*, *triopur* (*deirbhsiúr*), all of them r-stems, have pl. *ailltreaca*, *máilltreaca*, *bráilltreaca*, *triotaíreaca*, *siúllraaca*, *deirbhséaraca*. The mod. *sceac*, G. *sceice* (23), however, was, in early Irish, N. *sce*, G. *sciac*. For other plurals in -aca see 30.

### G- Stems.

57.—**Rí**, King, M.—N.A.V. *ri*. G. *rios*. D. *ris*. In the sg., however, s usually disappears, so that all cases are *ri*. N. pl. *rigte*. **Bri**, a hill, M. N.A.V. *bri*. G. *breas*. D. *bris*.

## N- Stems.

58.—V.A.N. **Cú**, hound, F. (M. in O.I.). G. con.  
D. coín.

„ **eascú**, eel. G. eascon. D. eascom.

„ **bró**, quern, F. G. brón. D. bróin.

„ **breiteam**, judge M. G. breiteaman  
(breitim). D. breiteamain (breiteam).

**Sobnait** (Girl's name); **naoithe**, babe, M.F.; **talam**, earth, M.F.; **múra**, Munster, F. ; **Alba**, Scotland, F. also belong to this declension.

**teanga** (53) and **pearsa** (orig. a- stem) have been attracted to this declension. G. teangán, pearsan. D. teangam, pearsam.

## NN- Stems.

## 59.—

V.A.N.—**brú**, womb, F. G. bronn D. bruinn

„ —**éire**, Ireland, F. „, Éireann „, Éirinn

„ —**sualta**, shoulder, F. „, sualann „, sualainn.

Like these are declined—**ábla**, Host, F. ; **gába**, smith, M. ; **ába**, river, F. ; **vile**, deluge, F.

60.—The old Neuters :—**aím**, M.F., **béim**, F., **céim**, M.F., **léim**, F., **réim**, F., **greim**, M., **tuitim**, F., **naróm**, F. (mostly snaróm, F., now), **maróm**, M.F., **seinnm**, M., **gáirm**, F. **foglum**, F., belonged originally to this declension. Owing to a short G. ending (-s, instead of -os) they dropped -nn in G. sg. which is now :—**áimme**, **béime**, **céime**, **léime**, **réime**, **greama**, **tuitme**, **naróma** (snaróme), **maróma**, **seannma** (seimme), **gárma**, **fogluma**. They are generally put in 2nd or 3rd declension, but they are nn- stems, and -nn- generally appears in the pl.—**ánmann** (**áimmneaca**), **béimeanna**, **céimeanna**, **léimeanna**, **réimeanna**, **greamanna**, **narómann**, **marómann**, **gármanna**. **Tuitim**, **seinnm**, **foglum** do not occur in pl. **lm**, butter, M. (G. **ime**) and **míor**, portion, F. (G. **míre** ; Pl. **míoranna**) also belong to this declension.

61.—Many of the nouns in 59 tend to use D. sg. as N. and inflect according to 2nd declension. V.A.N.D. *bromm*, *Ablamn*, *abainn*, *tilmn*. G. *bromne* (*bruinne*), *Ablamne*, *abamne*, *tilinne*.

## 62.—

## NT- Stems.

N.A.V.—	<b>CARA</b> , friend, M.F.	G. <i>carao</i>	D. <i>caraid</i>
„	— <b>píce</b> , twenty, F.	„ <i>píceao</i>	„ <i>pício</i>
„	— <b>náma</b> , enemy, M.F.	„ <i>námao</i>	„ <i>námair</i>
„	— <b>déad</b> , tooth, teeth, M.	„ <i>déro</i> (Orig. Neut. Now 1st declension)	
„	— <b>nuadha</b> (Proper Name)	„ <i>nuadat</i> ( <i>t</i> = <i>v</i> ). <i>más nuadat</i> , Maynooth.	

## 63.—

## R- Stems.

V.A.N.D.—**atair**, father, M. G. *atar*.

„	— <b>mátar</b> , mother, F.	G. <i>mátar</i> .
„	— <b>brátar</b> , kinsman, friar, M.	G. <i>brátar</i> .
„	— <b>triótar</b> , brother, M.	G. <i>triótar</i> .
„	— <b>siúr</b> , sister, female relative, nun, F.	G. <i>seatar</i> ( <i>siúire</i> , <i>siúra</i> , <i>seatrach</i> . D. sometimes <i>siair</i> ).
„	— <b>orífiún</b> (= <i>deirbhsíur</i> ), sister, F.	G. <i>orífeár</i> ( <i>deirbhséatar</i> ).

## 64.—

## S- Stems.

(V.)A.N.D.—**stíab**, mountain, M. G. *stéibe*.

(V.)A.N. —**teac**, house, M. „ *tíse*. D. *tig*.

(V.)A.N. —**más**, plain, F. „ *muigé* (*máigé*).  
D. *muig*.

V.A.N. —**leac**, side, F. „ *teite*. D. *teit*.  
„ —**uis** (Munster *ub*), egg, F. G. *uigé* (*uibé*).  
D. *uig* (*uib*).

In Munster generally M. G. *uib*.

V.A.N.D.—**steann**, glen, M. G. *steanna* (O.I. *glinne*).  
„ —**neam**, sky, heaven, F. G. *neimhe*, *nime*.

**clú**, fame, M.F. (G. *clú*), and **gné**, species, F. (G. *gné*) are s- stems. O.I. G. *gne*, *clua*=*cluae*).

## Plural of Consonantal Stems.

65.—Consonantal stems form their pl.—(a) By attenuating the G. sg. (b) By adding -a to G. sg. (c) By adding -e to G. sg. (d) Some by adding -i. (e) Some by adding -aca, -anna, -te, or -ta.

66.—Outside s- stems (which in O.I. had pl. in -e), and neuter nn- stems (which had N. pl. in -nn), the N. pl. ended in a slender consonant (method a). The other methods are due, partly to s- stems, and partly to confusion between the N. pl. and the A. pl. (which latter, except in neuter nn- stems, ended in a vowel in O.I.).

67 (a).—Pl. in a slender consonant :—

**CÚ**, N. pl. cum (conā, coimte, cumte). G. con. D. conaib  
**CAORA**, N. pl. caoiris. G. caorac. D. caoracaib  
**LAČA**, N. pl. lacam. G. lačan. D. lačanaib  
**FÍCE**, N. pl. fício (fíciroi). G. fícead. D. fíceadaib (fíciroiib).

**CÓMURSA**, N. pl. cómursam (Or -na). G. cómursan.  
D. cómúrsanaib.

**BREITÉAM**, N. pl. breiteamain (breitím). G. breiteaman.  
D. breiteamhnaib.

68 (b).—Plurals in -a :—

**PEARSA**, N. pl. pearsana. G. pearsan. D. pearsanaib.  
**NAORDE**, N. pl. naorðeana. G. naorðean. D. naorðeanaib.  
**Ceo**, mist (G. sg. ciac, ceoīs). N. pl. ceoča.  
 Also—cómursana, máša, míosa.

69 (c).—Plurals in -e :—

**CARA**, N. pl. cárde ; náma, náimde ; saða, saibne ;  
suala, suailne ; aða, aðine.

70 (d).—Plurals in -i :—aða, aðinni ; aðla, aðlanní  
(aðlanna) ; fíce, fíciroi ('na bříciroi, in scores).

71 (e).—Strong Plurals :—teac, tigte (O.I. tige) ;  
ri, rigte (O.I. A. rioga) ; ačair, ačreaca, etc. (see 56) ;

CÁTAOIR, CÁTAOIREÁCA ; TEANGA, TEANGTACA ; SÁOI, SÁOITE ; DRAOI, DRAOITE ; CION, fault, M.F., CIONTA (these last four were dental stems) ; ÁINM, ÁINMNEÁCA ; CRÉ, earth, F. (G. sg. CRÍAO, D. CRÍARÓ. But, in modern prose, G.D. CRÉ) CRÉDEANNA ; TEIME, TEIMTE ; FILÉ, FILÍ (O.I. filid, later FILDE, and so FILÍ) ; LÉIME, shirt, F., LÉIMTEÁCA ; CEO, CEODANNA (also regular CEÓCA, A c- stem) ; BRO, BRÓINTE (double pl. An n- stem) ; TALAM, TALMÁINTE (double pl.) TAÍLTE, TAÍTA ; BÉIM, BÉIMEANNA (and many others. See 60. Final A irregular) ; SLÍAB, SLÉIBTE (O.I. slé(i)be) ; GLEANN, GLEANNTA (O.I. glinne), GLEANNTAI (Ulster) ; LEAT, side (s- stem), LEATANNA, LEITEANNA ; UÍS (UÍB), UÍSÉACÁ, UÍBEACÁ. Also, regular, UÍSÉ, UÍBE (s- stem) ; TÍR, TIORTA.

72.—These endings—**-ANA**, **-ANNA**, **-ACA**, **-TE**, **-TA** (**-TE**, **-TA**), **-ANNTA**, **-TEACÁ**, **-I**—are due to the influence of n-, nn-, c- and dental stems. The endings **-ANNTA**, **-TEACÁ** are combinations of **-ann** and **-TA**, and of **-te** and **-ACA** respectively. They have made their way not only into the declension of vocalic stems, but interchange amongst the consonantal stems themselves. Thus :—

- (a) **TE**, **TA**, **TA** are attached to s- stems : TIÉTE, TIORTA, SLÉIBTE, GLEANNTA ; and to n- stems : BRÓINTE, TALMÁINTE.
- (b) **ACA** (properly belonging to c- stems) is attached to :—1° n- stems : AÍCREACÁ, MÁÍCREACÁ, etc. 2° Dental stems :—LÉIMTEACÁ, TEANGTACA. 3° The s- stem UÍS, UÍB, UÍSÉACÁ UÍBEACÁ. 4° nn- stems : ÁINMNEACÁ.
- (c) **-ANA**, **-ANNA** (from n- and nn- stems) are attached to—1° c- stems : CEODANNA (the o is only “padding” between vowels). 2° t- and d- stems : CRÉDEANNA. 3° s- stems : LEATANNA, MIÖNNA (miosa).
- (d) **-I** (from dental stems, ró, roe, i) is attached to—1°. The nt- stem FÍCE, pl. FÍCROI (FÍCRO, regular). 2° The nn- stems, ÁBÁ, ÁBLÁ, pl. ÁIBNNÍ, ÁBLANNÍ.
- (e) In Rathlin Irish plurals in **-AN**, **-EAN**, **-ANN**, are common with all stems :—

TÁ MO ČROÍDE BRÍSTE, BRÚÍÓTE,  
 IS TRIC NA DEOIR A RÍT Ó MO SÚILEAN (C.Č.U. 102),—  
 My heart is bruised and broken, and frequent tears have  
 run from my eyes.

So also :—bRÓGÁN (a- stem), cÁIRDEÁN (nt- stem),  
 bATÁN (io- stem), mnÁN, women (a- stem), fEARANN  
 (o- stem), etc.

73. A unique *diphthongal* stem is bÓ, cow, F. Sg.  
 V.A.N.G. bÓ. D. bUÍM (due to com). Pl. N.A.V. bÁ.  
 G. bÓ. D. bUAIB.

74 (a).—The G. pl. of consonantal stems is often the same as G. sg.—except in neut. nn- stems, and s- stems, which lose the characteristic consonant in G. sg. R- stems are also different, because they take -ACA in the pl. N. plurals in -ACA, -ANNA, -ANA, -TA, -TE, TA, -TE, -I, often retain these endings in the G. pl.

(b).—The D. pl. ends in :—1° -AIB, when the N. pl. ends in -A, or in a slender consonant. 2° -IB, when N. pl. ends in -E. 3° -I, when N. pl. ends in -I.

(c).—The V. pl. ends in :—1° -A, when D. pl. ends in -AIB. 2° -E, when D. pl. ends in -IB (-IB is replaced by -E). 3° -I, when N. pl. ends in -I.

75.—Indeclinable nouns :—Some proper names like fosa, pÁDRAIG, SEARÓI, SiubÁN, Muiris. Also the two common nouns, tOÑA, choice (objective), roÑA, choice (subjective). In the line—“ Is tu mo roÑAM TAR mnÁIB AN DÓMÁIN ” (L.O.), roÑAM is used for the sake of assonance with DÓMÁIN.

76.—MuñÁ, Munster, is an n- stem. ULARÓ (N. pl. o- stem)=Ultonians ; LAISGIN (N. pl. o- stem)=Leinster men ; CONNACHTA (N. pl.)=Connaught-men. G. pl. ULARÓ, LAISGEÁN, CONNACHT.

## CHAPTER III.

### THE ADJECTIVE (77—109).

**77.**—For the purpose of declension, adjectives, like nouns, are divided according to the nature of the stem. This gives us the following groups :—

**First Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a broad consonant. E.g.—*mór*, great, *geat*, white, bright. These include :—(a) *o*— and *a*— stems, *mór*, *geat*. (b) *u*— stems, like *rub*, black, *fluic*, wet, *tiug*, thick. The dissyllabic *uasal*, *iseal*, *vileas*, *pollus*, have, in G.sg.F. and N.pl. *uaistle*, *iste*, *vilse*, *pollise*, owing (in the pl.) to *i*- stems (O.I. *uaisli*, *isli*, *dílsi*). Instead of *vileas* we have also *vilis* (2nd decl.).

**Second Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a slender consonant, like *mait*, *vilis* (except those in —*amail*). These are all *i*—stems.

**Third Declension** :—Adjectives in —*amail*. Originally *i*— stems like *mait*, and declined like it. But O.I. *sainemlae* (G. sg. F. and G. pl.) and *sainemlai* (V.A.N. pl.) became *saineamla*, thus separating the two types. O.I. *maithi* (V.A.N.pl.) become *maite*.

**Fourth Declension** :—Adjectives ending in a vowel, including participles in —*ta*, —*te*, —*ta*, —*te*. These embrace (a) *io*—, —*ia* stems :—*dorca*, *uile*, *nua*, *cle*, *nearmha*, *fada*, *deanta*, *grt*. (b) The *o*— stem *beo* (A trace of the old declension survives in *mac Óe Ói*, Son of the Living God).

“*No a mic Óe Ói cia gni oo diaró-sa ván*” (Eamonn Óuirde)—Or who, O Son of the Living God, shall make a poem after you ? (the dead poet). With this exception, all these adjectives are uninflected in sg. and pl. In mod. I. the Dual in all adjectives is the same as the pl.

## EXAMPLES.

78.—First Declension :—mór, great ; vîleas, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—D.A.N.—mór; vîleas.	M.F.—V.A.N.D.—móra; vîlse
V.G.—móir ; vîlis.	G.—mór(a) ; vîleas (vîlse).
F.—V.A.N.—mór ; vîleas.	{ Réamhar (ramar), thick, stout, has pl. réamra (ram- ra). G.sg.F. réimre (ram- re). Gearr, short, G.sg.F. GIORRA. Pl. GEARRA.
G.—móire ; vîlse.	
D.—móir ; vîlis.	

N.B.—The D.pl. termination found in nouns is never, in mod. I., attached to adjectives, unless they are used as nouns. E.g.—biod truaſ agat do boctaib Óé—have pity on God's poor. But—bi truaſ agam do sna (na) fearaib bocta—I pitied the poor fellows. In the G.pl. there is a tendency to assimilate to the other cases—  
Bliain na mBuacailimBána—The Year of the Whiteboys.

79.—Second Declension :—maít, good ; vîlis, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—V.A.N.D.G.—maít, vîlis.	M.F.—V.A.N.D.—
	maíte ; vîlse.
F.—V.A.N.D.— maít, vîlis.	G.—maít(e) ; vîlis
G.—maíte ; vîlse.	(vîlse).

The adjectives deacair, difficult ; socair, easy ; cóir, right, have G.sg.F., and pl.—deacra, socra, córa. Seascair, comfortable, and fiaðain, wild, have G.sg.F., and Pl. seascaire, fiaðaine (without syncope).

80.—Third Declension :—fearamail, manly ; banamail, womanly.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.F.—V.A.N.D.—fearamail, banamail.	fearamla, banamla.
G.—fearamla, banamla.	fearamail, banamail (or —amla).

N.B.—The G.sg. in —a was originally F. only, the M. being in —amail.

**81.—Fourth Declension** :—With the exception noted above (77) there is no inflection whatever for gender, number or case. The adjective *te*, warm, was originally an nt-stem (Cf. Lat. *tepens*, *tepent*—). But, as no trace of the consonant now remains, it falls in with the io-stems. It has, however, *teo*, in G. sg. F., and in the pl.

**82.—Many dissyllabic adjectives in the 2nd, and all in the 3rd declension** (like *óileas*, *uasal*, in the 1st) are syncopated in the G. sg. F., and in the pl. E.g.—*deacair*, *deacra*; *socair*, *socra*; *milis*, *milse*; *aoibhinn*, *aoibhe*; *áilinn*, *áilne* (*áille*); and those in -amail, when -a is added. But note *fiaðaine*, *seascaire*. *Dreág*, fine, has G. sg. F. *breaga*. Pl. *breaga*.

**83.—Vowel-changes**, due to attenuation, are the same as those which occur in nouns : (a) Monosyllabic adjectives with -ea- before the final consonant change -ea- into "i" or "eɪ" :—*Seat*, bright, G. sg. M. *seil*, F. *site*; *mear*, quick, *mir*, *mire*; *Ceart*, right, *cirt*, *cirte*; *beag*, little, *bis*, *bige*; *Searr*, short, *gírr*, *giorra*. But—*teann*, stern, *teinn*, *teinne*; *deas*, pretty, *deis*, *deise*; *dears*, red, *deirs*, *deirge*; *seasc*, barren, *seisc*, *seisce*; *searb*, bitter, *seirb*, *seirbe*; *seang*, slender, *seing*, *seinge*; *teasc*, loth, *teisc*, *teisce*; *tearc*, scarce, *teirc*, *teirce*.

(b) o- gives uɪ-:—*bog*, soft, *buiç*, *buiçe*; *trom*, heavy, *truim*, *truime*; But—*boct*, poor, *boict*, *boichte*; *doct*, tight, hard, *doiçt*, *doiçte*; *noct*, naked, *noicte*, *noicte*.

(c) ia- gives eɪ-:—*fiat*, generous, *feil*, *feile*; *cian*, far, *cém*, *céme*; *vian*, severe, *vém*, *véme*; *fiar*, awry, G. sg. F. *féire*.

(d) iu- gives i-; -iu- gives -iúi-:—*pliuc*, wet, *pliç*, *pliçe*; *ciún*, calm (also *ciúm*), *ciúm*, *ciúme*. But *tiuç*, thick, dense, quick. G. sg. F. mostly *tiuça*.

(e) Final -ac, -eac become -aig, -aigé, -iç, -içé:—*bacac*, lame, *bacaig*, *bacaigé*; *direac*, straight, —*díriç*, *dírigé*; *Sasanac*, English. G. sg. M., *Sasanaiç*.

(f) -io- becomes -i-; -io- becomes -i :—*pionn*, fair, *pinn*, *pinne*; *mion*, small, -mm, *mine*; *crion*, withered, *crin*, *crine*.

### Formation of Adjectives

84.—A.—By means of suffixes (added to nouns, adjectives, numerals, verb-roots, prepositions) :—  
 1° *-ac* :—Rómánaç, Roman ; bacac, lame ; burðeac, thankful (<burðe, good-will, thanks) ; cuibsaç, middling ; fáitciosac, shy, fearful. 2° *-amail* :—pearamail, manly ; vanamail, womanly ; Criostamail, Christ-like ; magamail, mocking. 3° *-arðe, rðe* :—Criostarðe, Christian ; bearoarðe, sweetmouthed, fastidious ; teanbarðe, childish ; diablarðe, devilish ; eisceñlirðe, absurd, irrational. 4° *-ða, -ta, -tā* :—maorða, majestic ; beoda, lively ; iolardā, plural ; coibneasta, related ; mórdā, stately. 5° *-mar* :—neartmar, strong ; briogmar, full of “go” ; greannmar, queer, funny ; ponnmær, glad, willing. 6° *-te, -ta, -te, -tā* :—bualte, struck ; molta, praised ; imtigte, gone away ; fágta, left. 7° *to, -eto* (I. *-ead*) :—cúigeado, seiseado, 5th, 6th. 8° The double suffix *-mmo + -eto* (I. *-mæd*) :—triomæd, 3rd, ceatramæd, 4th. In the I.G. period sometimes *-mo* was used, sometimes *-to*. Lat. decimus, 10th (<\*dekm-mo-s), Gk. dékatos (<\*dekm-to-s). The two are combined in I. *-mæd*. 9° *-ineac, -anac* :—tointeanac, willing ; vlistineac, legal ; ainmneac, Nominative ; Alþanac, Scottish ; martanac, lasting. 10° *lo* :—uasal, noble (<*os*, above) ; iséal, lowly (<*ios*, below).

B.—By combination of noun and adjective, without any suffix :—Neartmar (84 A.5) < neart + móð, lit. strength-great. So ceann-dána, headstrong. The adjective áðmarac must be derived from áððar (not áð), as the suffixes *-mar* and *-ac* are not combined. (Proper spelling, áððarac). Mod. I. allows participles as the 2nd element : cosnoctaite, barefooted.

C.—By prefixing an uninflected particle to a noun :—  
 1° Saíðbir, rich ; daíðbir, poor (<áððar, material, with particles so-, do) ; sutain, everlasting (<tan, time) ; deoðair, diphthong (<de, composition form of do, two, and ðoðar, sound) ; suaičnro, well-known (so-aic-ȝnæt). The words incinn, brain (<in-ceann), Diarmuro, Dermot. (<di-formad), and deoðair, have become nouns. From these exx. it appears that nominal

**o-** stems became **i-** stems when adjectives were formed in this way. 2° So also **io-** stems and **ia-** stems mostly became **i-** stems :—**soilbhr**, cheerful ; **doilbhr**, melancholy (<**laibra**, speech, + **so-** and **-oo**). But **cómarba**, successor (it has become a noun), from O.I. **orbe**, heir, remains an **io-** stem. 3° The mod. **socrarð**, candid, and **docrarð**, gloomy—both from the **u-** stem **crut**, form, shape—are **i-** stems, instead of O.I. **sochrud**, **dochrud** (**u-** stems). So **cubairð**, fitting, is an **i-** stem, although derived from O.I. **fid** (**u-** stem), a letter of the Alphabet.

D.—By joining two adjectives together :—**lán-ðrónac**, in great sorrow ; **beag-maitreasac**, ne'er-do-well ; **mór-cúiseac**, conceited ; **uile-cómaictac**, almighty.

### Comparison of Adjectives

85.—There are three degrees—Positive, Comparative and Superlative. There is now no *equative form*, but the *equation* is expressed by the positive (or ordinary form of the adjective), preceded by **cóm** (as), and followed by **te** (as) before a noun or pronoun, or by **agus** (as) before a verb :—**nílum-se cóm láir** **te Samson**—I'm not as strong as Samson ; **tá Concubair cóm holc te Cáit**—Connor is as bad as Cáit ; **nílir-se cóm mait liomsa**—you are not as good as I. But—**nílum cóm láir** **anois** **· a bhos an uair sin**—I'm not as strong now as I was then.

### Comparative and Superlative

86.—In mod. I. the comparative and superlative are the same in form. The termination **-e** (in a few cases, **-a**) must be added to the positive, with attenuation of the final consonant of the positive, where necessary. Thus : **geal**, bright, **gile**, brighter, brightest ; **fiatl**, generous, **feile**, more (most) generous ; **fluic**, wet, **flíce**, wetter, wettest ; **aoiro**, high, **aoirroe** (**áirroe**), higher, highest ; **láir**, strong, **láiore**, stronger, strongest.

### The Comparative

87.—(a) When the verb of the comparative clause is “**is**,” the comparative follows **is** immediately :—**is gile an grian ná an geatac**—the sun is brighter than the

moon ; *is fearr an t-imreas ná an t-uaigneas*—contention is better than loneliness ; *ní measa Cás ná Concuðar*—the one is as bad as the other; *is fearr beit viomaoim ná droc-gnotac*—it is better to be idle than evil-doing. Such sentences may of course be relative, e.g.—*Níl doinne is measa ná tú*—there is no one (who is) worse than you.

(b) When the verb of the comparative clause is *tá*, or any verb other than *is*, the comparative must be preceded by *nios*, or *niba*, and the construction becomes relative :—*Tá an grian as taitneamh nios gile moe ná mar a bhi si moe*—the sun is shining more brightly to-day than it was yesterday ; *buail nios réime é*—strike it harder. (*Nios gile=ní a is gile*—lit. a something that is brighter) ; *bí an lá moe niba flice ná mar a ceapás a bhead sé*—yesterday was wetter than I thought it would be.

“ *ní* ” in these sentences is an *Accusative of Extent in Degree* (Syntax, 175 A.4.). In other sentences it may be :—1° N. to a verb :—*Tá nios mó ann ná ceapfa*—there’s more in it than one would think. 2° A. governed by a transitive verb :—*tugás nios mó ná san ouit*—I gave you more than that. 3° A. governed by a preposition :—*san nios mó ná trí scillimhe ’na poca aige*—with only 3s. in his pocket. 4° Absolute :—*ní fios cia’cu nios mó nó nios tuga a bhi ann*—there’s no knowing whether there was more or less in it.

### The Superlative

88.—(a) Superlative clauses are always relative, and the verb is always *is*. E.g.—*as an bfeair is fearr is ceart an post is fearr a beit*—the best man should get the best post.

(b) There are no comparative or superlative *adverbs* in mod. I. These forms are always adjectives, are never inflected for gender or number, and are always predicate N. to some form of the verb *is* :—*An tú an té is sime acu?* Are you the eldest? *’Si an tir is doibhne ar bit le fagán* (L.O.)—it is the pleasantest land in the world.

(c) The word *ná* (than) was, in O.I., in 3rd person sg., *oldaas* (than is), <*ol*+*taas*, a peculiar relative form of *tá*. In middle I. *in* was substituted for *ol*, giving *indaas*, then *ionás*, *ionád*, *ná*.

(d) The two nouns, *sinnsear*, elder, ancestor, and *sóisear*, junior, are, in form, comparative adjectives. *Sinnsear* is a *double compar.* from *sean*, old (<\*sen-is-teros), like Lat. *magister*, minister (master, servant. *Lit.*—the greater one, the lesser one). This compar. suffix -ter is common in I. E.g., *ceanntar*, district. Originally, the district *on this side* (of a mountain, river) as opposed to *alltar*, district *on the other side*. So—*oirtear*, East, as opposed to *iartar*, West.

### Irregular Comparison

#### 89.— *Pos.*

- 1.—*beag*, small.
- 2.—*oibh*, likely.
- 3.—*árth*, high.
- 4.—*fada*, long.
- 5.—*fogus*, near.
- 6.—*searr*, short.
- 7.—*iomád*, many a.
- 8.—*luat*, quick, early.
- 9.—*minic*, frequent.
- 10.—*mait*, good.
- 11.—*mór*, great.
- 12.—*ionmhum*, beloved.
- 13.—*otc*, bad.
- 14.—*te*, hot, warm.
- 15.—*breasg*, fine.
- 16.—*tréan*, strong.
- 17.—*uiriste*, easy.
- 18.—*cóir*, right.
- 19.—*deacair*, difficult.
- 20.—*socair*, settled.
- 21.—*gar*, near.
- 22.—*seascair*, cosy.
- 23.—*fiaðam*, wild.

#### *Comp. and Superl.*

- |                               |
|-------------------------------|
| <i>túsga</i>                  |
| <i>oibche, oibchige.</i>      |
| <i>aoirroe (áirroe).</i>      |
| <i>sia (furoe).</i>           |
| <i>foisge (foisge) neasa.</i> |
| <i>giorra.</i>                |
| <i>lia.</i>                   |
| <i>cúisge (luaité).</i>       |
| <i>minici (mionca).</i>       |
| <i>pearr.</i>                 |
| <i>mó.</i>                    |
| <i>annsa.</i>                 |
| <i>measa.</i>                 |
| <i>teo.</i>                   |
| <i>breascta.</i>              |
| <i>treise (tréime).</i>       |
| <i>usa (fusa).</i>            |
| <i>córa.</i>                  |
| <i>deacra.</i>                |
| <i>socra.</i>                 |
| <i>goire.</i>                 |
| <i>seascaire.</i>             |
| <i>fiaðame.</i>               |

### Proverbs

(Illustrating comparatives and superlatives)

**90.—**

1. Ni lúga an frígoe ná mactair an uilc—Evil may spring from anything (no matter how small). *fríS*, *frígoe*=flesh-worm).
2. Ni doicige aomníd ná an b्रéas do meall tu—The lie that beguiled you seems most likely.
3. Ni haoríroe do cura ná do clú—Your name is higher than your riches.
4. Ni sia ríctró teat ná mar is tol le Dé—You'll succeed just as long as God wishes.
5. Is goire (oo) duine cabair Dé ná an dorus—God's help is always very near. *Lit.*—God's help is nearer one than the door.
6. Ni lia ceann ná céadfaró—Everyone has his own opinion.
7. Is túisge vioigaltas Dé ná an diabhal—God's vengeance is quicker than the devil.
8. Is pearr ciatl ceannais ná an dá céill a muintear—Sense bought is twice as good as sense taught.
9. Ni measa Cáit (cáC) ná Concuðar—The one is as bad as the other.
10. Is treise vútcas ná oileamaint.—Nature is stronger than environment.
11. Is usa dul isteach i dtig an Rí ná teacht as—Palaces are pitfalls.
12. Ni h-annsa cóir ná coir le duine dán—A bold man prefers wrong to right.

### Notes on Irregular Comparison

**91.—2.** *Oic*, likely, O.I. *doich* (o), Gk. *dókei*, it seems. The O.I. compar. was *dochu* (our *vóca*). When *vóca* ceased to be *felt* as compar. a new compar. (and superl.), *doicige*, was formed.

**4.** *Sia*—compar. of *sior*, long. The compar. and superl. are used of time and space; *sior* now only of time.

**7.** *Lia*—compar. of *il* (iol), many, now used only as a prefix.

**12.** *Annsa*=O.I. *annsu*, compar. of *annse* (an-as, not easy). Cf. the use of *measa*—*Is measa liom tusa ná*

Seán—I prefer you to Sean. *Lit.*—Your case is worse in my estimation than S.'s (Therefore, I prefer you).

11, 16. In *mó*, *sí*, *treise*, a suffix found in the pos. is omitted. A pos. form *treis* is heard in Co. Clare.

92.—Adverbs are formed from adjectives usually by prefixing *go* (to) to the positive, the latter being a neut. substantive in the A. case. *Tá sé ag dul i bhfeabhas go mó*—he is improving much (*Lit.* to a great extent). The prep. *oे* (oo) is sometimes used :—*oे síor*, *oे gnáct*=always. *Sac noireac*, straight on, occurs in the literature.

### Numeral Adjectives

#### Cardinal

93.— 1.	<i>aon.</i>	31.	<i>aon véas is fíce.</i>
2.	<i>dó.</i>	40.	<i>dácaid.</i>
3.	<i>trí.</i>	41.	<i>aon is dácaid.</i>
4.	<i>ceatair.</i>	50.	<i>deic is dácaid.</i>
5.	<i>cúig.</i>	51.	<i>aon véas is dácaid.</i>
6.	<i>sé.</i>	60.	<i>trí fício.</i>
7.	<i>seacht.</i>	61.	<i>aon ⁊ trí fício.</i>
8.	<i>oict.</i>	70.	<i>deic ⁊ trí fício.</i>
9.	<i>naoi.</i>	71.	<i>aon véas ⁊ trí fício.</i>
10.	<i>deic.</i>	80.	<i>ceitre fício.</i>
11.	<i>aon véas.</i>	81.	<i>aon is ceitre fício.</i>
12.	<i>dó véas</i>	90.	<i>deic is ceitre fício.</i>
13.	<i>trí véas.</i>	91.	<i>aon véas is ceitre fício</i>
14.	<i>ceatair véas.</i>	99.	<i>naordéas is ceitre fício</i>
15.	<i>cúig véas.</i>	100.	<i>céad.</i>
16.	<i>sé véas.</i>	200.	<i>dá céad.</i>
17.	<i>seacht véas.</i>	300.	<i>trí céad.</i>
18.	<i>oict véas.</i>	400.	<i>ceitre céad.</i>
19.	<i>naoi véas.</i>	500.	<i>cúig céad.</i>
20.	<i>fíce.</i>	600.	<i>sé céad.</i>
21.	<i>aon is fíce.</i>	700.	<i>seacht g céad.</i>
22.	<i>dó is fíce.</i>	800.	<i>oict g céad.</i>
29.	<i>naoi is fíce.</i>	900.	<i>naoi g céad.</i>
30.	<i>deic is fíce.</i>	1000.	<i>mile.</i>

N.B.—Besides such forms as *trí is fíce* (23) we also have—*trí fícead*, or *trí ar fício*.

94.—If the old words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90 are used, *viz.*, *trioča*, *ceatracá*, *caogá*, *seasca*, *seac̄moġá*, *oċtmoġá*, *nōcā* (nt- stems, G. in -o) we get neater and shorter forms in the compound numerals, all of which (except those for 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, 100, etc.) will be based on the first ten numerals. Thus :—  
*Sé deas* (16), *sé ficeao* (26), *sé triocao* (36), *sé ceatracao* (46), *sé caogao* (56), *sé seascao* (66), *sé seac̄moġao* (76), *sé oċtmoġao* (86), *sé nōcāo* (96). The use of *ar* in *tri ar ficio* (23), *tri ar caogaro* (53), etc., is an extension of the O.I. usage, in which it served two purposes :—(a) to join the hundreds to the smaller numbers—*seasca ar cēao*, 160; (b) to join the tens to numeral substantives—*dias ar fichtit* (*ois ar ficio*), twenty-two persons.

95.—The Cardinals are used in three different ways :—  
 1° Preceded by a particle *á* (*á h-* before vowels) when counting objects without naming them—*á h-aon*, *á vō*, *tri*. *Tá sé teat-uair tréis á tri*—it is half-past three; or when preceded by the noun, as *caibriol á tri*, chapter 3; or when the numeral is separated from the noun by the prep. *de* :—*á tri nō á ceatair de bliantaib*—three or four years. 2° They are used without any particle in abstract counting, as—*aon*, *vō*, *tri*,—one, two, three; or when the noun follows immediately—*tri capaill*—three horses. 3° In concrete enumeration, when the noun is used without *de*, it is placed after the unit number (if there be one) in the sg., pl., or dual, as the sense demands. Instead of *vō*, *ceatair* (2, 4) *vá* (*óá*) *ceatre* are used.—*Aon bliam deas*—11 years (sg.); *vá bliam deas*—12 years (dual); *tri bliana ficeao*, 23 years (pl.); *aon cearc deas*—11 hens (sg.); *vá círc deas*—12 hens; *tri ceárca seascao*—63 hens.

96.—The words for the tens from 20—100, as also *mile* (1000), *million* (a million), *billion* (a billion) are *nouns*, and so properly take G. pl. But as the G. pl. is often the same as the N. sg., the latter is used as a rule :—*fice pear*, *cearc*, *bean*—20 men (hens, women). *Deas* (=2 fives) is used as G. of *veic* in forming

the numerals 11-19. It has no etymological connection with *œic*. *Céad* (100) is an old neut. o- stem, pl. *céada* (after numerals). Apart from numerals a new pl. *céadaita* is used.

**97.**—*Seacht*, *oict*, *naoi*, *œic* eclipse the initial consonant of the following noun, but *not* that of the genitives *deag*, *ficead*, etc.—*Seacht mboscaí deag*, 17 boxes ; but *seacht deag*, 17 ; *oict mbliana caoga*—58 years, but *oict caoga*—58 ; *naoi n-uaire triocad*—39 times, but *naoi triocad*—39. The reason is that in *seacht mboscaí deag*, etc., the 1st numeral is *the limiting word*, whereas in *seacht deag*, *deag* *limits the meaning* of *seacht*, and not *vice versa*. The eclipsis after *seacht*, *naoi*, *œag* is regular, as they ended originally in a nasal (Lat. *septem*, *novem*, *decem*). *Oict* eclipses analogically. N.B.—*œic cinn*, *œic pearsana*, *œic toibreacha*—10 heads, persons, wells—are heard. The reason is that the final “h” sound of *œic* unvoices the consonant resulting from eclipsis, and thus restores the original one. Then *seacht cinn*, etc., follow these analogically.

### Examples of the Cardinals

**98.**—(a) 78 cards :—1—*oict scártai deag is tri fíadro*. 2—*seacht nœic a n-oict de cartaiib* (Note this. It is often convenient). 3—*oict scártai seachtmoigad*. (b) 357 books :—1—*seacht leabhair deag* & *dacad*, & *tri céad* (*leabhar*). This is cumbersome. 2—*seacht leabhair deag* & *dacad* *ar tri céad*. 3—*tri céad* & *seacht leabhair caoga* (Best). (c) The year 1927 :—*bliam a mile*, *naoi scéad*, & *seacht ficead*. (d) 1927 years :—*mile naoi scéad* & *seacht mbliana ficead*. (e) The 1927th year :—*An seacht-mad bliam ficead ar naoi scéad* & *mile*. (f) 275,000 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig mile seachtmoigad ar òa céad*. 2—Modern I.—*òa céad* & *cúig mile seachtmoigad*. (g) 200,075 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig seachtmoigad ar òa céad* *mile*. 2—Modern I.—*òa céad* *mile* & *cúig seachtmoigad*. (h) 75,200 :—*cúig mile seachtmoigad ar òa céad*. (i) £245,666 :—*òa céad* & *cúig mile ceatracad*, *sé céad* & *sé púint seascad*. (l) 5,592,963 acres :—*cúig milliún*, *cúig céad*, & *òa mile nócad*, *naoi scéad* & *tri n-acrai seascad*,

(m) 7,925,639 stamps :—seacht milliún, náoi scéad ḡ cús mile pícead, sé céad ḡ náoi stampai triocad. (n) 6,560,374 books :—sé milliún, cús céad ḡ seasca mile, trí céad ḡ ceitre leabair seachtmošad. (o) 4,605,747 tables :—ceitre milliún, cús mile ar sé céad, seacht scéad ḡ seacht mbúird ceatracad. (p) 17 people :—seacht náume déag. (r) 39 people :—1—náoi náume triocad. 2—náoi náume déag is píce. 3—náoi náume déag ar píce. (s) 143,000 men :—céad ḡ a trí ḡ dacad de miltib fear (B.N. 277).

99.—(a) Trí, ceitre, cús, sé often aspirate the initial consonant of the following noun, which then often has the sg. form—trí capall, or trí capaill—three horses ; cús milliún, or cús milliún, 5,000,000. This is due to trí céad, where céad is a true pl. and aspiration is regular. (b) In enumerating persons, from 13 to 19, the sg. duine is used, and o- is aspirated, if not eclipsed. Thus—trí duine déag—13 persons. But—seacht náume déag—17 persons.

### Numeral Substantives

100.—(a) For persons :—Aonar, one person. Táim im' aonar—I am alone. Beirt—two (used in Ulster even of things). Tías, tís, two (G.—deise, tise. But tías, an ear of corn—G.—deise, D.—deis). Triúr—three persons (Orig. D.—Old N.—triár). Ceatrar—four persons. Cúigear—five persons. Seisear—six persons. Mór-seisear—seven persons. Also seactar. Octar—eight persons. Naonbar—nine persons. Deicneabar—ten persons. Aon duine déag, aomne déag—eleven persons ; dáréag—twelve persons. Iolar—many persons (Also many things, plurality) ; lánama—a married couple (<lánearmáin—a perfect pair, G. lánarmina—but it has passed over to the n- stems—G. -an. The rt. is eamain, twin, L.—geminus. Cf. eamain, Emania.) All these forms, except beirt, tís, aon duine déag, lánama, are compounds, with fear as the 2nd element. They were originally neuter. Triár=a three of men. But though they contain the M. fear, they are used of women also. Triúr ban—three women. Triúr is the old D.

of **TRIAR**. It ousted the N. because of its frequent use in an O.I. idiom (without a prep.). E.g.—**tánaðar a triúr**—the three of them came.

(b) For things :—**Ioíar**, many things, plurality. Abstr. **ioírað**, plural ; **uatað**—singleness. “ **ár uatað spóirt**,”—with scanty amusement ; **véroe**, **tréroe**—two things, three things ; **tréðanas**, “ a three days’ fast,” now generally abstinence ; **perore**, **perore**—a pair, brace, set (even though more than two), p. **brós**, a pair of shoes : p. **biorán cniotála**, a set (4) of knitting-needles ; **cúpla**, a couple, twins. Dim.—**cúiplín**. Always followed by the N. sg. form.

### Special Ways of expressing numbers

**101.**—**Tri caogaðo**—150 ; **tri naonbair**—27 people ; **seacht bñicrói**—7 score ; **triocá céad**—3,000.

### 102.

### The Ordinals

1st	An céad (lá)	16th	An seisead (lá) véas
2nd	„ <b>vara</b>	17th	„ <b>seachtmað</b> „ „
3rd	„ <b>triomáð</b>	18th	„ <b>t-octmað</b> „ „
4th	„ <b>ceatramáð</b>	19th	„ <b>naomáð</b> „ „
5th	„ <b>cúigead</b>	20th	„ <b>ficead lá</b>
6th	„ <b>seisead</b>	21st	„ <b>t-aonmað</b> „ <b>ficead</b>
7th	„ <b>seachtmað</b>	22nd	„ <b>vara</b> „ „
8th	„ <b>t-octmað</b>	30th	„ <b>deicmað</b> „ „
9th	„ <b>naomáð</b>	31st	„ <b>t-aonmað</b> „ <b>triocád</b>
10th	„ <b>deicmað</b>	32nd	„ <b>vara</b> „ „
11th	„ <b>t-aonmað (lá)</b> véas	33rd	„ <b>triomáð</b> „ „
12th	„ <b>vara</b> „ „	40th	„ <b>ceatracádamað (lá)</b>
13th	„ <b>triomáð</b> „ „	41st	„ <b>t-aonmað (lá) ceatracád</b>
14th	„ <b>ceatramáð</b> „ „	42nd	„ <b>vara</b> „ „
15th	„ <b>cúigead</b> „ „	43rd	„ <b>triomáð</b> „ „
		50th	An caogaðamað (lá)
		51st	„ <b>t-aonmað (lá) caogað</b>
		52nd	„ <b>vara</b> „ „
		53rd	„ <b>triomáð</b> „ „
		60th	„ <b>seascadomað (lá)</b>
		61st	„ <b>t-aonmað (lá) seascad</b>

62nd	An	DARA	(lá seascað)
63rd	„	TRIOMAÐ	„ „
70th	„	SEACTMOÑGADOMAÐ	(lá)
71st	„	T-AONMAÐ	(lá) SEACTMOÑGAD
72nd	„	DARA	„ „ „
73rd	„	TRIOMAÐ	(lá) SEACTMOÑGAD
80th	„	T-OCTMOÑGADOMAÐ	(lá)
81st	„	T-AONMAÐ	(lá) OCTMOÑGAD
82nd	„	DARA	„ „ „
90th	„	NÓCAÐOMAÐ	(lá)
91st	„	T-AONMAÐ	(lá) NÓCAÐ
92nd	„	DARA	„ „ „
100th	„	CÉADMÁÐ	(lá)
101st	„	T-AONMAÐ	(lá) AR CÉAD
110th	„	DEICMÁÐ	„ „ „
121st	„	T-AONMAÐ	(lá) FÍCEAD AR CÉAD
131st	„	„ „ „	TRIOCAÐ „ „
222nd	„	DARA	FÍCEAD „ DÁ CÉAD

103.—(a) Besides *triomáð* (3rd), *seisead* (6th), *deicmáð-fícead* (30th) we have also *treas*, *sémað*, *triocaðomað*. (b) *Céad*, 1st, is used in the simple, *aonmað* in the compound numerals. *Céad* aspirates the following consonant, because, like *aon*, it formed a compound. *Aonmað* (like the others in -mað) does *not* aspirate, but (like them) is followed by *n-* before a vowel, except in the G.—na *n-aonmað* *aoise* *véas*, of the 11th century.

(b) First, adverbially, is *ar vtúis* (*ar vtús*). *O'fóglum sé a ceact ar vtúis*—First he learned his lesson ; *i scéad-óir*—at once, forthwith ; *i vtosac*—at the beginning of.

(c) The Ordinals (from 1st to 10th, as well as 20th, 100th, 1000th) immediately precede the noun, like the Cardinals (the tens, however, together with *céad*, mile, millún, being nouns). (d) “Last” is *deirionac*, *véideanac*, which follow the noun ; or it may be expressed by *deirid* (G. sg. of *deiread*) ; or, in such expressions as “last Sunday,” special phrases are used. E.g.—*Bionn an duine deirionac vioðbálaç*—the last is likely to be a sufferer ; *lá deirid an mi*—the last day of the month ; *Óra Domhnaç seo gairb tarainn*—last Sunday (adverbial.—See 296). (e) The other day (i.e., a few days ago) is—

*an lá fé òeireadó*, or *an lá céana*. (f) "One day" (i.e., on a certain day) is—simply *lá-lá* *dá* *raib sé ag* *deanamh* *bros* (*Séasna*)—One day as he was making shoes. *Aon* *lá* means "any day"—*Tair isteach cùsgam aon lá is maitteat*—Come in to me any day you please. *Aon lá amáin* means one day (not two, or three)—*Níor caiteas ann ac aon lá amáin*—I spent only one day there. *Lá airite*—on a certain day, is stronger than *lá* alone.

104.—The Ordinals are indeclinable adjectives, used with sg. nouns only. (But see 105). "The first arrivals," "the first three rows," etc., must be turned in another way.—*B'íad san dá tuisge a táinig*—These were the first arrivals. *Ná n-uimhreacha tosaig*—The first numbers. *Ná trí surðeacán tosaig*—The three front seats. *Tosaig* is so used even with a sg. noun—*Sroé focal tosaig ná Tána*.—This is the first word of the *Táin*.

105.—But *céad* can be used before *dá* :—*An céad dá lá san*—Those first two days. Here *dá* *lá* is viewed as a unity. Cf. *an deic bpúint sin*—That £10, where *deic bpúint* is a sum of money, and so takes the sg. article. So we may say—*An céad deic bpúint*, *an dára deic bpúint*—The 1st (2nd) sum of £10. *An dá céad lá san*= Those 200 days. Such expressions as "the third seats" (in several rows) are not allowable in I. They must be expressed *distributively* :—*Sac triomadh surðeacán*.

### Fractions

106.— $\frac{1}{2}$ —*teat* (Neut. o- stem, G. *teit*). It is used separately, and as a prefix—*teat mo ríseacta*, the half of my kingdom; *teat-pinginn*,  $\frac{1}{2}$ d.; *teat-tuistíún*, 2d. (*tuistíún*, 4d.); *teat-raol*, 3d.  $\frac{1}{3}$ —*trian* (Neut. o- stem): *dá trian* (note *eclipsis*),  $\frac{2}{3}$ ;  $\frac{1}{4}$ —*ceatramha* (F. n- stem). In D. sg. *ceatramain* (cf. quatrain) it means a line in a four-line stanza, or the stanza itself.  $\frac{1}{5}$ —*cúigearó* (Neuter Ordinal used as noun). So the other Ordinals are used with *curo*, *rann*, etc., to express other fractions.  $\frac{7}{10}$ —*an triomadh rann déag fé seact*.  $\frac{1}{10}$ —*Oeacmao*—also tithe, or tax, in general. *Deicmao*=10th.  $\frac{1}{7}$ —*Sémao curo* (*teat-trian*). In fractions like  $\frac{6}{7}$ ,  $\frac{7}{10}$ , the Ordinal, though

used substantively, is uninflected :—*sé seachtmað* ( $\frac{6}{7}$ ), *seacht noeachmað* ( $\frac{7}{10}$ ), *an fíceadh curu ve—the  $\frac{1}{20}$* . *Tri ceathramha* ( $\frac{3}{4}$ ).

### Multiplicatives

107.—*Aonfeacht*, once ; *do uair*—twice ; *a do fé do* (*fé n-a do*)— $2 \times 2$  ; *ró tri*—thrice (Numeral A). *Tri seacht*— $7 \times 3$ . *Oeic bprício*—ten score,  $20 \times 10$ , etc. The *v-* of *do* is aspirated, except after *v*, *n*, *t*, *t*, *s* ; or, of course, it may be eclipsed.

### Other Adjectives of Quantity (not Numerals)

108.—(a) *Éigín*, *áirite*.—*Bí an tuatáil véanta ag duine éigín*—Someone had blundered. It is implied that the speaker *did not know* who it was. *Éigín* is probably the Instrumental case of the *noun*, *éigean*, necessity. *Áirite* also was a noun (K. uses *v'áirite*). *Tá neite áirite gur mait liom tágairt vóib*—I should like to refer to certain things (the speaker, of course, knows them). *Éigín* corresponds to L. *aliquis*, and *áirite* to *quidam*. (b) “Any”—*aon* (in neg. sentences, “no”)—*'ófuis aon airgead aghat?* Have you any money? *Níl aon chiall aghat*—You have no sense. “Anyway”—*ar aon cuma*. In affirmative sentences, *pé cuma*, *pé áit*, are also used. *Pé cuma is fearr leat*—Anyway you prefer. *Pé áit is mait leat*—Anywhere you like. (c) “Many, many a.”—*Is mó duine bí i riocáit spáran v'fagán* (*Séadana*). Many a man was on the point of getting a purse. But “many” is often rendered by nouns, or certain idiomatic expressions. *A lán uisce*, *airgíod*, *árain*—Much water, money, bread. A definite G. must not follow *a lán*. Partitive *ve* (with D.) must be used instead. *A lán v'uisce na Laoi*—Much of the Lee water. *Mórán*—*Is é is vóic le mórán*—Many people think ; *púinn*—(Only in negative, or virtually negative clauses): *Níor scríob sé púinn leabhar*—He didn’t write many books ; *do mbeadh púinn Daoine ag eolas acu air*—Had there been many (there were not) who knew it. (d) How many? *An 'mó?* *Cé méro?* *'Oe méro* :—*An mó Dia*

ann?—How many Gods are there? Cé mério fear a bì ann?—How many men were there? Dé mério garsún sa scoil inóiu? (e) However many—dá mério (a mério), dá liact (a liact), etc. Dá mério a bì ann ní raibh dochtain díobh ann—However many were there, there weren't enough. (f) So many—(a) oiread san—bí oiread san acu ann sur cuaird diom a gcomaiream—There were so many there I couldn't count them. (g) As many more—oiread eile—Dá mbeadh oiread eile acu ann d'fearbamh iad a comaiream—Had there been as many more there, I could have counted them. (h) Twice as many as—a dá oiread agus—Tá a dá oiread seirbiseac anois aige γ a bì aige bliam ó són—He has twice as many servants now, as he had a year ago. (i) Half as many—leat an oiread—Níl ac leat an oiread seirbiseac anois aige γ a bì aige—He has only half as many servants now as he had. (j) Too many—an iomao, an iomarca—Tá an iomao cainte agat—You've too much to say. (k) A great many. Besides móran, a lán, other phrases occur:—ní beag de seo; ní beag d'iongna; ní beag d'uathas; is mó an seo; níl aon tseo (aon iongna, aon uathas) ac . . . (l) As many as—Cóm (lionmar, iomadarail, pairsing, rerosearmail) agus (verb following) or le (noun or pronoun following). (m) All—gac, gac aon, an uile, gac uile—an uile duine—every one. Not always expressed by adjectives:—a raibh d'airgead ann—all the money there was. As prefix, -uile (iú, ou)—uile-cómactac, almighty; ouiscoil, iouiscoil—University. (n) Other, another, others—eile; nac (é, i, iad); fé ñeire, ceana:—An lá fé ñeire—the other day; daoine nac é (i, iad)—other people. (o) One after another—1 nuaidh céile; 'na gceann is 'na gceann (of things), 'na nuaime is 'na nuaime (of persons); fá seac. (p) Each other, one another—a céile. (q). More.—Besides the comparative mó, one uses also tuille, breis (nouns); tar, seacás (prepositions); Any more than—ac oiread agus (before verb), ac oiread le (before noun or pronoun); ac cóm beag agus (or le); ac fé mar. . . Once more—aris; aon uair amain eile; the prefix at, ait,—do ñein sé é at-atris—he told it once more. More power to you—Conac sanort; a conac san ort.

### Pronominal Adjectives

109.—These are derived from, or partake of the function of, pronouns. They are :—(a) The Article (See 1-7.) (b) Possessive Adjectives. (c) Demonstrative Adjectives. (d) Interrogative Adjectives. The article, being formed from the two pronominal elements, “sin” and “to, ta,” belongs to this class. (b) The Possessive Adjectives are :—

*Sg.*

*Pl.*

1. mo' . . . . -sa (-se)	árn . . . . -na (-ne)
2. vo' . . . . -sa (-se)	óarn . . . . -sa (-se)
3. M. Neut. a' . . . . san (sm)	a'n . . . . -san (sm)
F. a . . . . san (sm)	

These are *the emphatic forms*, which alone should be given in a paradigm. When the English *my*, *thy*, etc., are given in a list, they mean, of course, *my*, *thy* (contrasting the persons). The Irish for *my*, *thy*, etc., is *not*, and *could not be*, *mo*, *vo*, etc., but as given above. When there is no emphasis, drop the particles. Examples :—*Mo tis*, *my house* : *mo tis-se* (*mo teac-sa*)—*my house*; *a scainnt breas*—*their fine talk* : *a scainnt breas san*—*their fine talk*.

(c) The Demonstrative Adjectives are :—1. *So*, *seo*. 2. *úvo*. 3. *san*, *sm*. They follow the noun, or noun+adjective or adjectives, immediately, and the noun is generally preceded by the article. But proper nouns, especially if the demonstrative is followed by *a scainn-ne* (*a scainn-se*, *a cu san*) may dispense with it.—*Séadna so a scainn-ne*—*This Séadna of ours*. Also, in *Oia Mairt seo cùscann*, etc., there is no article. *So* (*seo*) is the demonstrative of the 1st person, *úvo* that of the second, and *san* (*sm*) that of the third. *Seo* and *sm* are used after a *slender vowel* or consonant.

(d) Interrogative Adjectives :—*Cia*, and *ca* are often adjectival :—*Cionnus* (*cia ionnus*), how ; *c'ait* (U.) where ; *ca n-uair* (U.), when ; *canad* (*ca ionad*) where ; *cia 'cu* (followed by noun) which ; *cia méri*—how many, how much ; *céard*, *créard*, what ? *Cionnus* (*conus*) 'taoi ? How are you ? (An “is” not a “ta” sentence,

as the principal verb is “is”). Expanded it is—Cia ionnus an ionnus a taoi? What way (is) the way in which you are? Cf. the Conn. Cia ctao a bfuil tu? C’ait a (i) raib (rab) se (U)? Where was he? O’imteis se—ni fios dom canao—He went—I know not where. Cia’cu ceann ab’ fearr teat? Which one would you prefer? Equivalent to—Cia ceann acu (an ceann) ab’ fearr teat? In the expressions Cia n-e (i, iad), Cao e (i, iad), cia and cao are *pronouns*.

## CHAPTER IV.

### PRONOUNS.

- 110.—Pronouns are either—(a) Personal.  
 (b) Demonstrative. (c) Interrogative. (d) Indefinite.  
 (e) Reflexive. (f) Relative.

The Personal Pronouns are :—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. <i>míse</i>	<i>Sinn-ne (Sínne)</i>
2. <i>Tusa</i>	<i>Síb-se</i>
3. M.— <i>eisean (Seisean)</i>	<i>laeo-san (Síao san)</i>
F.— <i>sise (Síse)</i>	All genders.
Neut.— <i>eaðo ón (eaðon)</i> .	

These are the emphatic forms (See 109). When unemphatic the 1st sg. is *mé*, 2nd *tú*, 3rd M. *é (sé)*, F. *i (sí)*, Neut. *eaðo*. In the pl. drop the emphatic particles. *É*, *i*, *laeo* (and their emphatic forms) are used :—1° As subjects or predicates to the vb. *is* :—*Is é Séasna a bí ann*—It was S. who was there (I. *é predicate*, Eng. *it subject*, each proleptic). 2° Disjunctively, i.e., unattached, either as subj. or pred. to a verb :—*Bí sé ann, γ é ar dearg-buile*—There he was, stark mad. 3° As object of a transitive verb (autonomous or otherwise); as subject of a passive verb; or A. governed by certain prepositions :—*buail é*, strike him; *póspær i*—someone will marry her; *creacfar laeo*—they will be robbed; *róir é γ i*—between him and her. 4° Absolutely (See 195) :—*Tá a fiú agam i ðeit i ngráðo teis*—I know she's in love with him.

*Seisean, sise, síao-san* (and their unemphatic forms) are used conjunctively as subjects to any verb other than *is* :—*Tá sé ar buile*—He's mad; *Táid síao san ar aon aighe liomsa*—They agree with me.

The neut. emphatic particle (in 3rd sg.) appears only in *eaðon*, O.I. *ed ón*, ie. (viz., namely). It means

"it (is) it." With the copula ón or són was used where we now say san.—ba dochtúr éan=san=O.I. ba dochu lem són (Quoted by *Thurn.* 241).

### The Suffixed Pronouns

**111.**—A.—The so-called prepositional pronouns are examples of personal pronouns suffixed (in D. or A.) to prepositions. B. Genitive pronouns suffixed to prepositions. C. Suffix—o in verbs.

#### A.—Prepositional Pronouns

##### Old Datives

##### 112.—

(a) oo, to, for, etc.

Sg.

1. óm-sa

2. óit-se

3. M.Neut. ó-san

F. ói-se

Pl.

óimh-ne

óib-se

óib-sin

Sg.

óimh-sa

óib-se

óib-sin

Pl.

óinn-ne

óib-se

óib-san

óise

(c) ó, from, through, etc.

1. uam-se

2. uat-se

3. M.Neut. uaró sin

F. uate sin (-se)

uamh-ne

uab-se

uata san

(d) á (as), out of.

asam-sa

asat-sa

as san

asamh-ne

asatb-se

asta san

aiste sin

(e) Róm, before (O.I. re)

1. rómam-sa

2. rómät-sa

3. M.Neut. róime sin rómpa-san

F. róimpi sin

rómamh-ne

rómab-se

róimpe sin

agam-sa

agat-sa

aga san

agamh-ne

agatb-se

aca san

aici sin

(f) ás, at, etc.

##### 113.—

##### Old Accusatives.

(g) te, with, etc.

1. liom-sa

2. leat-sa

3. leis-sin

F. téit-sin (téi)

(h) tré, through

linn-ne

tib-se

leo-san

tríom-sa

tríot-sa

tríó sin

trínn-ne

tríib-se

tríota-san

tríte sin

(i) *Só*, to (O.I. *co*)(l) *Um*, about, around,  
etc.

1. cūgam-sa	cūgamn-ne	umam-sa	umainn-ne
2. cūgat-sa	cūgai <b>b</b> -se	umat-sa	umaib-se
3. cūge sm	cūca-san	ume sm	ūmpa san
F. cūcī sm		umpi sm	

(m) *Toir*, between, etc.(n) *Tar*, beyond, past,  
etc.

1. eadram-sa	eadramn-ne	tarm-sa	taramn-ne
2. eadrat-sa	eadraib-se	tart-sa	taraib-se
3. toir é	eatorca san	tairis sm	tarsa, tarsta,
F. toir i		tairsi, tairsti sm	san

**114.** Either Dative or Accusative.(o) *In*, in, into(p) *Air*, because of, on, into,  
etc.

1. ionnam-sa	ionnainn-ne	orm-sa	oramn-ne
2. ionnat-sa	ionnaib-se	ort-sa	oraib-se
3. ann san	ionnta-san	air sm	orta-san
F. incti sm		uircti sm	

(r) *Fé* (*fó*, *fa*, *faoi*), under, etc.Sg.—1. *fum-sa*Pl.—1. *fumnn-ne*2. *fut-sa*2. *fuai**b**-se*3. *fé sm* (*faoi sm*). M.Neut.3. *fuca san*.F. *fuiti sm*.**115.**—Besides these we have :—

(a) Occasionally—*Seac*, besides (A).—*Seacam-sa*, *seacat-sa*, *seac é*, *seac i*. Pl.—*Seacainn-ne*, *seacai**b**-se*, *seaca san*. Instead of *seac é*, *i*, *seaca san*, we now use *seacas é*, *i*, *tao san*. (b) Isolated forms :—1. *Ceaná*, now an adv.=already, is a prep. pron. from O.I. *cen* (our *san*)=without it. 2. *Riam*, now an adv.=ever before, is prep. pron. 3 sg. M. and Neut. from *re*, before. 3. In *riut* (*as sior-séveread riut*—“*Éamonn an Cnuic*,”) we have 2 sg. form from the prep. *fri*, against (O.I. *frit*, *friut*). *Riut* also occurs as 2 sg. from *re*, before.

4. The Conn. *freisin* seems to be the O.I. friss sin, influenced by *teis* sin. 5. K. has *uaistí* (3 sg. F.) from *os* (K.P. 79).

### 116.— Notes on the Prepositional Pronouns.

(a) *Cúgam-sa*, etc., though formed from the O.I. prep. *co* (so) reduplicated, are now associated with the later prep. *cum*. That is, they are used wherever *cum* would be used with nouns. E.g.—*cum na catrac*—to the city; *cúca san*—to them. The reduplication may be due to the influence of *agam-sa agat-sa* (*Thurn.*). (b) *fo*, now *fó* (Conn. *faoi*, U. *fá*, M. *fé*). *faoi* may be due to O.I. 3 sg. A. *foi*; and *fé* may be due to the M. pronunciation of *-aoi* in certain words, e.g., *caoi*. *fuití* seems to be formed on the analogy of *cúctí*, *uaite* (the later O.I. form was *foae*). (c) *Ann*, orig. D. while *intí* (O.I. *inte*) was A. The A.M. and D.F. forms are lost. In *ionnta* (O.I. *intiu*) the pron. is A., the D. (O.I. *móib*) having become obsolete, because it was the same in form as the 2 pl. (our *ionnaib*). (d) In *ortá*, *leo*, *leobta* (analogical), *triota*, *eatorta*, *iompa*, *cúca*, *tarsa*, the pron. is A., as the preps. *le*, *tré*, *ri*, *um*, *co*, *tar* governed only an A., while *ar* (though it governed both cases with nouns) was compounded only with A. *pronouns*. (e) *Acu*, *astá*, *uata*, *rómha* are formed after these models (v), replacing the forms in *-ib*—O.I. *occaib*, *eissib*, *uadaib*, *remib*—where the prons. were of course D., as these prepositions governed only the D. (f) In *vóib*, *vioib*, we have regular D. forms, except that the final *-b* of *vioib* has been broadened, to prevent confusion with the 2 pl. *dib*. (g) In 2 sg. a slender *-t* seems to have been regular in D. so that *viot*, *asat*, *agat*, *rómät* are irregular. A. forms show broad *-t*—*teat*, *umat*, *triot*, *cúgat*, *tart*, *ionnat*. *ort*, *füt*, *seacat*. (h) In 3 sg. M. and Neut. the A. pronoun in O.I. appeared as :—1° a slender vowel, after preps. which originally ended in a vowel—*ré*, *uime*, *cúige*, *ceana* (O.I. *cene*). 2° After preps. which originally ended in a consonant, the vowel is lost, but the final consonant is slender—*teis*, *trió*, *amharo*, *tairis*. *Air* was in O.I. regular, *airi*; the mod. *air* is irregular, modelled on O.I. *foir*, *fair*. *Ann*, as we have already

seen, is D. (i) The 3 sg. A.F. in O.I. ended in -e (now mostly -i, because of the pron. i)—*innti*, *uimpí*, *cúicí*. (j) The 3 sg. D.M. shows either a final broad consonant, or broad vowel—*aṇṇ*, *riam*, *as*, *oo*. *Aigé* (O.I. *occo*) is modelled on *cuiṣe* (A). *Uarò* (O.I. *uaò*) may be influenced by *uaim*, *uait*.

### B.—Genitive Pronouns suffixed to Prepositions.

117.—Instead of the full forms of the G. pronouns certain prepositions usually have shorter suffixed forms. These prepositions are :—*Ag*, *o*, *m*, *oo*, *oe*, *re te* :—*Agam' mātar*—at my mother ; *am' tis-se*—at *my* house; *ubairt sé suas tem' béal*—he said up to my face ; *tá sé sé mile óm tis-se go vti vo tis-se*—it's six miles from my house to yours ; *vom lom veirrò aimbheona*—entirely against my will ; *vo baineao' tem' bonnaiß mé*—I was taken off my feet. 2nd sg. *Agoo' mātar*—at your mother ; *ro' tis-se*, in *your* house ; *let' atair*—with your father. So—*oo'*, *vot'*—to your ; *veo'*, *vet'*, of or from your ; *reó'*, *rav'*—under your ; *oo'*, *ot'*—from your. . . . With a (3 sg. M.F.) and a (3 pl.) we have—*Agá* (*S* slender), *o'á* ; after *o*, *te*, *re* (owing to *m* and other eclipsing preps.) *o n-a*, *te n-a*, *re n-a*. In 1 pl. and 2 pl. the G. pronouns are never shortened.

### C.—Suffixed -o in Verbs.

118.—In 1 pl. pres. Ind. Act. and Fut. Ind. Act. final -o is a neuter pronoun :—*oéanfaimío*, *surómío*, *lit.*—we shall do it, we pray for *it*. So final -o in 1 sg. Fut. Ind. Act., and 1 sg. Pres. Subj. Act. :—*raǵao*, *beao*.

## Demonstrative Pronouns

119.—These are :—1. Seo, so. 2. Siúo, súo. 3. Sín, san. Strengthened forms—é seo, é siúo, é sín (i seo, iao so, etc.). The simple forms are uninflected for gender, number and case. The strengthened forms indicate gender and number, and of course the prep. pronouns, when followed by the demonstratives, *do not cease* to convey distinctions in gender, number and case.

120.—The Demonstratives may be :—1° Subj. of the verb *is*, or other verb :—*is* *fearr so ná sú*—This is better than that. *Ní maic líom sán* : *ní caitneann sán líom*—I don't like that. 2° Predicate to verb *is* (when not following immediately)—*Sé deirimse teat ná so*—This is what I tell you. *Sé teastuis uair ná sú*—What he wanted was what I told you. When they follow *is* immediately they are strengthened by *e*, *i*, *ao* :—'Si siúd a bí uair'—It was "that one" he wanted. 3° Object of transitive verb (Autonomous or otherwise)—*Tarraing seo, buail sm*—Pull this, strike that (Rhyme). 4° Used *absolutely* :—*Bí a luct cóimhle* *gá áiteamh uirti sán a déanamh*—Her advisers urged her to do that. 5° Governed by prep. :—*As sán*—out of that; *tar so gá sú*—by all the oaths. 6° Virtual N.—*Deadh náire orm sán ro déanamh*—I should be ashamed to do that (See 169).

### Interrogative Pronouns

121.—*Cia* (M.F.), *cé* (M.F.) ; *cia h-*, *cé h-* (before *e*, *i*, *ao*) ; *cád* (Neut.). *Cá*, whence (*cá+an*—the same *an* as we have *prefixed* in *an-uas*, etc. (See 157B),—is the only mod. I. ex. of an interrogative pron. governed by a prep. Otherwise *cia*, *cád*, *cá* (and compounds) are always pred. N. to vb. *is* (understood). The U. forms—*gároé*, *gároí*, *gároíad*, seem to reflect O.I. *cote*, *coteet*—cate in *fhírinne*—in what consisteth righteousness ?

### Interrogative Particles

122.—Direct and indirect *single* questions, not introduced by interrogative pronouns, or adjectives, prefix the particles *an*, *ar*.—*An rabais ar scoil moé?*—Were you at school yesterday? *O'fiafruig sé óiom an rabas ar scoil moé*—He asked me if I was at school yesterday. *Negative* questions are introduced by *ná* (in Munster, except with "is") ; *nac*, outside Munster, with all verbs ; in Munster, also with the present tense of *is* ; *nár* everywhere, in the past tense, except with those verbs to which *ro* is attached, and certain others which dispense with *ro*-altogether. *nár* (like *ar*) is used also

with the Conditional of *is* (expressed or understood).  
 ná fuit sé annso?—Isn't he here? nácfearra duit é? Isn't it better for you? nácfuit sé cóm mait agat? (outside Munster)—May you not as well. . . .? But ná rabais ann?—Weren't you there? ná feacais é?—Didn't you see him?

**123.**—*Double questions* are put by means of *cia'cu*, with a direct relative form in the first member, and *nó ná* (*nac*, *nár*) in the second member, when it is negative. (For explanation, see **214 II.**). *Is deacair a rád cia'cu* (a) *cuaro sé ann nó nár cuaro* (*deasgaro*)—It is hard to say whether he went or not. The disjunction implied in “whether . . . or” may be expressed in other ways:—1° (Without *cia'cu*):—*An fán sé ann, nó an amharca a cuaro sé a baile*—Did he stay or go home? 2° The 2nd alternative is put in the verb n. form, with ellipsis of the auxiliary verb *vein* (see **286**).—*An fán sé arm, nó dul a baile?*

### Indefinite Pronouns

**124.**—(a) *Cáċ*, everyone:—*tá fíos ag cáċ*—everyone knows. (b) *aoinne* (*aoinneac*)—anyone (with neg.—none): *gáċ aoinne*, everyone. (c) *ceactar*—originally “each of two,” now “one or other of two”; with neg. “neither,” “not any” (of more than two). (d) *-neac*—someone, anyone. Nearly obsolete, but we have it in *aoinneac*, and in the comparative form *neactar*. (e) The neut. *ni*, anything, had something to do with the development of the noun *níō*, a thing. In L.B. we find a pl. *nechi*, mod. *neite*. In *níō*, the *ó* is merely a re-echo of *t* (for earlier *ch*) in *neite*. The pl. spelling *níote* is a reconstruction from *níō*. (e) *neactar*. Originally, “one of two.” Common now in the phrase—*nó neactar acu*=or else. Both *ceactar* and *neactar* were probably neuter nouns originally, like *oirtear*, *iartar*, *ceanntar*, *alltar*, etc.

The adjectival form of *cáċ* is *gáċ*. The slender *c-* in *ceactar* is due to *neactar*. The *g-* of *gáċ* is often slender also, especially in:—*gáċ 're seao*. *Aon* is sometimes

used pronominally. *Aon naomha Dé* (C.S. Mark, I, 24)—The Holy One of God. *Aon r̄em' cártoib s̄r̄e* (TBC)—one of my “supernatural” friends. *Aon ba m̄o n̄a é f̄ém* (CMD. 394)—One greater than he. *O'mnis Eom cé'r̄b̄ é an t-aon san* (CMD. 394),—John told who this One was.

### Reflexive Pronouns

**125.**—Added to the personal pronouns, *f̄ém* makes them reflexive:—*do ḡortuiḡ sé é f̄ém*—he hurt himself. *Caoim̄ tu f̄ém a d̄uine boict* (KP.)—weep for thyself wretched man. *Grád̄ do d̄uine f̄ém*—self-love. Besides the reflexive meaning, *f̄ém* has others:—(a) Own—*mo leabhar f̄ém*—my own book; *tu f̄ém fé n̄dear e*—the responsibility is all your own. (b) Even—*an méor̄ s̄in f̄ém*—even that. *Cuir i ḡcás f̄ém*—even supposing. *f̄ém* contains a part of the verb *is*, and *é sin*, but is now used of all three persons, both numbers, and all genders. It is an example of *the generalisation of a single form*. Cf. the nominal phrase *a céile*, used to mean, each other, one another.

### Relative Pronouns

**126.**—**Direct relatives** are, normally, those used in N. and A. But after prepositions which govern the A., the forms 5° below are used. **Oblique relatives** are those used for G. and D. (including Abl., Loc. and Instr.). The modern relatives are:—**A.—Direct** :—1° *a'*, 2° *oo'*, 3° *a' o'*, 4° ‘(particle omitted). **B.—Oblique** :—5° *a n̄*, *aR'*, 6° *son*, *sun'*, 7° *n a n̄*, *n-aR'*. **C.—Negative** :—8° *n̄a*, in Munster (outside past tense) with verbs other than *is*. 9° *nac*, outside Munster, with all verbs (except past tense); and in Munster with *is* (in present tense). 10° *nāR'* in past tense; and in the conditional of *is*. **D.—Compound** :—11° *a n̄* (outside past tense); *aR'*, in past tense; and conditional of *is*; and, without aspiration, in present tense of *is*. Examples:—

1° *a'*—*An bean cos-nochtaithe is i a b̄i ann* (S.)—It was none other than the barefooted woman. 2° *oo'*, *o'*—*Sroé an té oo cuaird̄ ann*—this is he who went. *Tá 'fios*

ag tuct na n-ionnarba cao d'oireann doib (T.B.C. 247)—  
 The exiles know what (it is that) suits them. 3° a d'—  
 nuair a d'éirig lósep as a coda do déan sé mar a  
 d'orouig aingeal an Tígearna dó (C.S. 3)—And Joseph,  
 rising up from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had  
 commanded him. 4° (Particle understood). Sin é mill  
 mé (S.)—that's what ruined me. Cao é an tairbe péasfad  
 sé a déanamh uait? What good could he do you? 5° an,  
 ar' (ar', in past tense; also in present (without aspira-  
 tion), and conditional, of is):—Cé'n d'ioib mé, nó cé 'mb'  
 as mé (11.n.6)—Who I was, or whence I was. An curaí  
 a cur a baile ag an bpear a mbu teis i (Ibid. 21)—to send  
 the curragh home to its owner. (Note, in these exx.  
 from Conn. I., that an sometimes does *not* combine with  
 ro in the past tense. The same is true of go occasionally  
 in Munster I.—an muimntir go mba leo é (CMO. 377)—  
 the owners of it). Sul a ráib d'uain aige filleadh—before  
 he had time to return (Here ro- combines with the verb).  
 Is maírs do'n fear san tré n-a noéanfar Mac an Duine  
 do dhol (C.S. 75)—Woe to him through whom the Son  
 of Man shall be betrayed (Rel. A. governed by tré).  
 6° son, sur' (sur' in past tense; and also in pres. (without  
 aspiration) and conditional of is). An té teis sur cumanas  
 fágad (Proverb)—If you haven't room enough you can  
 leave! An té surbe a Dia aボシ—he whose God is  
 his belly. 7° n-an, nar' (n-ar' in past tense; and also  
 in present (without aspiration) and conditional of is):—  
 An té n-arb' é a Dia aボシ—he whose God is his belly.  
 'Se duibhaint gac plait n-ar mait leis triall (Song)—Every  
 chief that wished to go (to fight) said. 8°, 9°, 10°—ná,  
 nac, nár :—Rud éigin nár b'fároir a d'fágáil—something  
 that could not be got. An té ná fuit lároir ni fulair dó  
 veit glic (Proverb)—If you're not strong, you need  
 cunning. An té nac truaig leis do cas, ná déan do gearán  
 leis (Proverb)—Don't look for sympathy from the  
 unsympathetic. 11° The Compound Relative—an, ar' :—  
 O'fág sé an steann 's a ráib ann agam—He gave me  
 carte blanche (Lit.—He left me the glen, and all that  
 was in it). Do caiteas ar tuilleas—I spent all I earned.  
 N.B.—The relatives 8°, 9°, 10°, 11°, have no distinctive  
 forms for direct and oblique uses.

Development of **so**, **sur**; **n-a**, **n-ar**; **oo**; **a'**.

**127.—so, sur.**—Developed from—**1° as a—An ni ó** bfuil Saeðeal Glas, is tearc sa bfuil a seancas (K.H. II, 18)—Few people know the history of the name G.G. (**sa=as a**, passing easily to **so**). **2° The conjunction so—Cao é mar duine é seo, so smaðtuigéann sé gao� i fairrge, i so ndeoim ro siad ruo air?** (Luke, viii, 25)—Who is this that He commandeth the winds and the sea, and they obey Him? The 1st **so** is clearly conjunctive. The 2nd one easily develops the relative meaning—“Who is this *whom* winds and sea obey”? **3° The contrast between ná and so as conjunctions facilitates the use of so as an affirmative relative, corresponding to the negative relative ná.** By a sort of *proportional analogy*, we get—Con. ná : conj. **so** : : Rel. ná : Rel. **so**—Neite beaga jnár cuir sé blúire suime ionnta nuair a connaic sé ar dtuis iad, ac **sur** cuir sé mórán suime aois ionnta (N. 168)—Trifles to which he paid no attention whatever when he first saw them, but to which he paid great attention now.

**ná, n-ar :**—**1°** From preps. which ended in a nasal (and others which imitated them) we get, with oblique rel. **a**, the form **n-a** (**n-ar**). E.g.—**i n-a** (in which), **so n-a** (with which), **ri a n-a** (before whom), and, in imitation of these, **ó n-a** (from which), **tre n-a**, **te n-a**. **n-a** was then isolated, and used as an oblique relative, even when such preps. did not precede it. **2°** From accidental occurrences like—**an bean n-a** bfuil **an t-éadair** corcra uirti—where the final -n of **bean** might have been carried to **a**, changing it into **n-a**. Cf. the *liaison* in Fr. vous avez, etc., and a like phenomenon with rel. **oo**.

**oo.**—**1°**—From confusion with prep. **oo** in compound verbs like **oo-geibim**, **oo-cuaird**. These, when non-relative, are often used without **oo**, which then assumes the function of a relative. **2° oo beir** in O.I. (with unaspirated b-), but **intí do beir** (b-asp.)—he who gives. In mod. I. **oo beir**, where b is always aspirated, the aspiration cannot mark relativity, which is therefore assigned to **oo**—**an té oo beir**. **3°** From fortuitous occurrences like—**tá 'fios as luct na n-ionnarba cap oireann ooib.**

A'.—In verbs like *atá*, *atáir*, *atáibhaint*, initial *a-* contains the remains of a prep. which was kept, in later I., only in rel. sentences, so that gradually it came to be looked on as the relative element. *ár n-atair atá ar neamh*—Our Father who art in heaven. The form *a' ó'* is merely a reduplicated form of *oo*. The prep. *oo* often becomes *a*, and before certain words beginning with a vowel, or *f* takes the double form *a ó* (this happens in Scottish Gaelic also). Relative *oo*, side by side with relative *a*, has been similarly treated.

N.B.—The direct relative *a* does *not* aspirate :—  
 (a) *ba*, the past and conditional of *is*. *An té a b'fearr*—he who was best ; *b'sm é a b'fearr*—that's what would have been best. (b) Autonomous forms (in many places). *Tréis a tuigtear gac beart* (Proverb)—it is afterwards a deed is appreciated. This holds even when the *meaning* is oblique (as in last ex.). It holds also of *oo*—*an ruo oo veineadh*, that which was done. (c) The *t-* of *tá* and the *v-* of *veir*, *vbaint*, etc.—*Ní mé atáibhaint an cainnt sma*—It wasn't I who said that.

Note also, that *ar*, *n-ar*, *gur* never aspirate the *b* of the present tense of *is* :—*pé duine le n-arb ait é*—Whoever thinks it queer. *An té n-arbé a Dia a bolg*.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

**128.—A.—Simple Verbs** :—These are subdivided into  
 (a) Root Verbs—*molaim*, I praise, *buaileim*, I strike.  
 (b) Denominative verbs, in -*uis*, -*is*, from nouns and  
 adjectives—*árhoisim*; *istisim*, I lower; and disyllabic  
 verbs in -*il*, -*in*, -*ir*, -*is*, -*inS*. The verbs in Class (a)  
 are First Conjugation; those in Class (b) Second Conju-  
 gation. N.B.—Verbs like *tíomáin*, with long 2nd syllable  
 belong to 1st Conjugation. Fut. *tíomáinfeadh*.

### B.—Compound Verbs (135-153).

#### 129.— A.—SIMPLE VERBS.

(a) Root verbs, *molaim*, *buaileim* (First Conjugation).

**Active Voice.      Indicative Mood.**

#### Present Tense.

Sg.

Pl.

1. <i>molaim-se</i> , <i>buaileim-se</i>	<i>molaimio-ne</i> , <i>buaileimio-ne</i> .
2. — <i>aír-se</i> , — <i>ir-se</i>	<i>molann sibse</i> , — <i>eann sibse</i> .
3. — <i>aín seisean</i> ( <i>síse</i> ) <i>buaileann seisean</i> ( <i>síse</i> ).	— <i>aír síosan</i> , — <i>ir síosan</i> .

#### Imperfect.

1. <i>do molaimn-se</i> , <i>do buaileinn-se</i>	<i>do molaimis-ne</i> , <i>do buaileinis-ne</i>
2. „ — <i>á-sa</i> , „ — <i>teá-sa</i>	„ — <i>ád sibse</i> , „ — <i>eád sibse</i>
3. „ — <i>ád seisean</i> ( <i>síse</i> ) „ <i>buaileadó</i> „ „	„ — <i>árois sm</i> , „ — <i>rois sm</i>

#### Past.

1. <i>do molas-sa</i> , <i>do buaileas-sa</i>	<i>do molamair-ne</i> , <i>do buaileamair-ne</i>
2. „ — <i>ais-se</i> , „ — <i>is-se</i>	„ — <i>ábair-se</i> , „ — <i>eábair-se</i> .
3. „ <i>mol</i> , <i>do buail seisean</i> ( <i>síse</i> ).	„ — <i>ádar san</i> , „ — <i>eádar san</i> .

## Future.

Sg.

1. molfao-sa, buailfeao-sa.
2. —fair-se, —fir-se
3. —faró, buailfiró seisean (sise)

Pl.

- molfaimio-ne, buailfimio-ne  
 —faró sibse, —firó sibse  
 —faró siðsan, —firó siðsan

## Conditional (Secondary Future).

1. do molfaimn-se, do buailfimn-se do molfaimis-ne, do buailfimis-ne
2. „, —fa-sa, „, —feá-sa „, molfað sibse, „, —feaoð sibse
3. „, —farð seisean, „, —feaoð „, —farðis sm, „, —feois sm  
sise.

## Imperative Mood.

- |                          |                            |                         |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. molam-se, buailim-se  | molamis-ne }<br>molam-na } | buailimis-ne<br>—eam-na |
| 2. mol-sa, buail-se      | molardó-se,                | —buailrð-se             |
| 3. molð, buailrð seisean | —arðis sm,                 | —rois sm                |

## Subjunctive Mood.

## Present.

1. molðo-sa, buailteao-sa
2. —air-se, —ir-se
3. —airð, buailrð seisean (sise)

## Past.

(Same in form as Imperfect Indicative).

## Passive and Autonomous.

- 1° Pres. Indic.—moltar, buailtear. Moltar é (Pass.) he is praised (é N.) Aut.—Someone praises him (é A.).
- 2° Past Indic.—oo molð, oo buailteð (Init. consonant un aspirated).
- 3° Impft. Indic.—oo molti (moltaí, moltaoí), oo buailti.
- 4° Fut. Indic.—molfar, buailfar (f. broad, at least in many parts of Munster).
- 5° Conditional.—(oo) molfi (molfaoí), (oo) buailfi.
- 6° Imperative.—moltar, buailtear.
- 7° Subjunctive.—Pres.—moltar, buailtear. Past.—molti (moltaoí), buailti.

## 130.— Subsidiary Forms.

The above paradigms (where three persons are given) show, of course, the emphatic forms (109). When unemphatic, drop the particles. The meaning, in some of the tenses, is *habitual*, and, in all, *absolute*; and there is direct reference to the *action*, not a *state* previous or subsequent to the action.

Verbs, however, like *deirim*, I say, *creidim*, I believe, *measam*, I think, *samluigim*, I fancy (2nd conjug.), *cloisim*, I hear, *cim*, I see, *tuisim*, I understand, may convey either the *actual* or the *habitual* meaning. In other verbs, the meaning may be, instead of *absolute*, *progressive* and *contemporaneous*; there may be reference, not to the *action*, but to a *state*. Hence the above paradigms must be supplemented :—

Pres. Indic.—A.—Direct reference to *action* :—(a) Contemporaneous (Habitual): 1° Active :—*bionn sé am'* *molad* *γ e i latair na mac-leiginn*—He keeps praising me, when he is with the students. 2° Passive :—*bionn sé dā molad acu an fad a bia ann*—He is being praised by them all the time they are there. 3° Auton. :—*bitear am'* *molad*—Someone keeps praising me.

(b) Actual :—1° Active :—*Tá sé am'* *molad* *anois*—He is praising me now. 2° Passive :—*Táim dom'* *molad* *aige*—I am being praised by him. 3° Auton. :—*Tátar am'* *molad* (*am'* *buailad*)—Someone is praising (striking) me.

B.—Direct reference to *state* :—(a) Habitual :—*bionn an coirce buailte aige nuair a sroisim-se an sgíoból*—He has the oats threshed when I reach the barn (Subsequent state). (b) Actual :—*Tá an cruitneact buailte aige ceana*—He has already threshed the wheat (Subsequent state). Similar distinctions occur in all the moods and tenses.

## 131.—Notes on the Moods and Tenses :—

1° The ending *-ann*, *-eann*, of 3 sg. pres. Indic. first appears in the prototonic forms of certain compound verbs, whence it spread gradually. O.I. *as-ren*, pays out, neg.—*ní érenn*. It was not, therefore, originally,

a personal ending at all, as -renn is the vb. root, re(n), present stem, with -n doubled.

2° The 3rd sg. rel. ending is -as, -eas. Used as 3 pl. as well, but rarely at all in Munster. The pl. forms are obsolete.

3° In 1 pl. -aimio, -imio, had final i short, and had no -o.

4° The Impft. (when no other particle is used) is generally preceded by oo, which aspirates the *active* forms. In final syllable of 1 and 3 pl. i has been lengthened. (Due to assimilation in dissyllabic forms with i in penult,—oo vimis?)

5° The ending -ao, eao, in the finite vb., except in Pass. and Auton., is pronounced -ac, -eac. In Pass and Auton.= -as (uas), -ac, -av, according to the district. In the vb. n. the -o is silent in Munster.

6° In Past. Auton. and Pass. oo- prefixes n- to initial vowel, to distinguish from Act. forms—o'airigeao Seán, —S. used to hear. But—oo n-airigeao S.—S. was heard.

7° In the past tense the particle ro generally combines with certain other particles :—an (interrog.), ni (not), na (conj. or neg. rel.), a (obl. rel.), so (conj. or obl. rel.), n-a (obl. rel.), muná (unless), cá (where?), giving instead :—ar, nior, nár, ar, sur, n-ar, munar, car.

8° But these combinations are not used with :—raib, rug, ramis (these have ro- already); peaca (saw), fuair (found); sometimes with—tug (gave), tamis (came), deasair (went,—by-form of deacaró); usually not with deacaró (went), dearna (made, did—which already contains ro-).

9° Ro- is used, in affirmative wishes (Optative Subj.) with is, and tá alone :—slán go raibair—Thank you (ro- included in vb.). Surb amharó duit—The same to you. Not with other verbs.—go n-eirigis an oide teat—Good-night.

10° In neg. wishes ro is used with all verbs :—nára' maist agat-sa—No thanks to you. Nár cuitigtear vo saotar teat—May your exertions not be recompensed.

Rat ná ráib ort go veo—May you never have luck ! (ro- included in vb.).

132.—Verbal noun, and adjective (or participle) :—  
1° Vb. noun :—molao (G. sg., and N. pl.—molta, molta); bualaoo (G. sg., and N. pl., bualte, bualte). 2° Participle :—molta, molta ; bualte, bualte.

### 133.— (b)—Second Conjugation.

#### Active Voice. Indicative Mood. Present.

Sg.

Pl.

1. árouisim-se, istisim-se, árouisimo-ne, istisimo-ne,  
freagrainm-se.
2. árouisir-se, istisir-se, árouiseann, istiseann,  
freagrair-se.
3. árouiseann, istiseann, árouisio, istisio, freagrano  
freagrann (seisean, sise).

#### Imperfect.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

#### Past

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

#### Future.

1. ároócaó-sa, isteočao sa, ároócam-na, isteočam-na,  
freagročao sa.
2. ároócair-se, isteočair-se, ároócaro, isteočaro, freas-  
ročair (sib-se).
3. ároócaro, isteočaro, ároócaro, isteočaro, freas-  
freagročaro (sise).

#### Conditional.

1. o'ároócamn-se, o'isteočamn-se, o'freagročamn-se.  
(Same endings as in Root Verbs, but without f-).

#### Imperative

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

#### Present Subjunctive.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

#### Past Subjunctive.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

### Passive and Autonomous.

- 1° Pres. Indic. :—áRDUÍSTEAR, ISLÍSTEAR, FREASGARTAR.
  - 2° Past Indic. :—DO H-ÁRDUÍSSEAO, DO H-ISLÍSSEAO, DO FREASGRAO.
  - 3° Impft. Indic. :—DO H-ÁRDUÍSTI, DO H-ISLÍSTI, DO FREASGARTI (-TÁI).
  - 4° Fut. Indic. :—ÁRDÓCAR (ÁRDÓFAR), ISLEOCAR (-ÓFAR), FREASGROCAR (-ÓFAR).
  - 5° Conditional :—(DO) H-ÁRDÓCTAI, ISLEOCCTAI, FREASGROCTAI (-ÓFTAI).
  - 6° Imperative :—ÁRDUÍSTEAR, ISLÍSTEAR, FREASGARTAR.
  - 7° Pres. Subj. :—(Same as Imper.).
  - 8° Past Subj. :—(Same as Impft. Indic.).
- Vb. n.—ÁRDUÍSAO, ISLÍUSAO, FREASGAIRT (FREASRA).  
Vb. adj.—ÁRDUÍSTE, ISLÍSTE, FREASARTA.

N.B.—ÍSLÍSTIM (though its root, iseal, is syncopated all through) is not a syncopated verb like FREASAIR. The latter loses the vowel of its 2nd syll. when an inflection beginning with a vowel is added. ÍSLÍSTIM is never syncopated in this way.

134 (a).—Spelling (and pronunciation) like O'ÁRDÓFÁ, etc., are due to DO GEOBTÁ (DO GEOBTAR, DO GEOBTI) where b becomes f regularly, because of t.

(b) FREASGAIRT, and other compounds of GAIR,—AGAIRT, TAGAIRT, FÓGAI RT—have two vb. n. forms. The one in -t is due to TABAIRT. Thus—TABAIR : TABAIRT :: FREASAIR : FREASGAIRT. Earlier—FREASRA, AGRA, TAGRA, FÓGRA. These we have still, but with a different meaning. The forms in -t denote the name of *the action*; those in -a the *objective content* of the action :—'Sé FREASRA FUAIR SÉ, The answer he got was . . . . FÓGRA—proclamation, etc. AGRA—a claim. TAGRA—a reference, etc.

### B.—Compound Verbs.

135.—In most so-called irregular verbs, the “irregularity” is chiefly due to the fact that they are compound, and appear in two different forms :—

(a) The Deuterotonic, i.e., with stress on second syllable :—*do-béirim*, *ao-béirim*, *do-géibim*.

(b) The Prototonic, i.e., with stress on first syllable :—*tábraim*, *ábraim*, *fàgaim*.

There will, therefore, generally be two forms in the paradigms :—the Absolute (generally deuterotonic) and the Dependent (always prototonic). The Dependent form is used after the Conjunct Particles :—

- 1° The negatives :—ni, nior, naċ, nā, nár, muna, munar.
- 2° The interrogatives :—an, ar, naċ, nā, nár.
- 3° The oblique relatives :—a, ar, so sur, n-a, n-ar.
- 4° The compound relative :—a, ar.
- 5° The conjunctions :—so, sur, oā (if).

136.—Several roots are sometimes needed (Cf. Eng. go, went; am, be, was) :—

1° Tā employs the roots :—stā (L. adstare, Eng. stand); bhu (L. fui); uel (I. fuil, W. gweled, to see, O.I. fil-us, they are (*Lit.*—behold them)).

2° do-béirim, I give, bring, etc., employs the roots :—bher (L. fero, E. bear); ug (O.I. -ucc)—tugas.

3° Téigim, I go, employs the roots :—steigh—téigim (E. ve—stige); reg.—raigead, O.I. rega; erg—éirig a coitlaō—go to bed (O.I. eirgg). Now confused with éirig, rise; vb. n.—oul; ued, in 3 sg. pres. Indic. and in the past Indic.

137.—

I.—Téigim, I go.

Indicative.

Pres.—Sg.—1. téigim-se, etc. (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. téigmid-ne, etc.

Impft.—Sg.—1. do téiginn-se (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. do téigmis-ne, etc.

Past.—Absolute :—Sg.—do cuadás (cuas)-sa, do cuadáis-se, do cuaird seisean (sise).

Pl.—do cuadámaír-ne (cuamair-ne) etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Dependent :—Sg.—*deigseas-sa* (*deacás*) (see 139), *deigis-se*, *deagaird seisean* (*sise*).

Pl.—*deigseamair-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Fut.—Sg.—*raġad-sa* (*rac . . .*), *raġair-se*, *raġaird seisean*.

Pl.—*raġmio-ne*, etc. (as usual).

Cond.—Sg.—(oo) *raġainn-se* (as usual). Pl.—(oo) *raġaimis-ne*, *raġad síbse*, *raġaird sím*.

### Autonomous Forms.

Pres. Indic., Imper., and Pres. Subj.—*téigtear*.

Impft. Indic.—*téigti*. Fut. Indic.—*raġfar*. Cond.—

*raġfi*. Past Indic.—oo *cuaðas*; nior *deigteas*.

Past. Subj.—*téigti*.

138.—Vb. n.—out. Participle—*imtigte* (*vulta* as Participle of Necessity (293A.)). Imper. Act.—*téigim-se*, *téirig-se*, *téigeard seisean*; *téigmis-ne*, etc. (as usual). Pres. Subj. :—*téigead-sa* (like *buaillead*). Past Subj.—*téiginnse* (like *buailinn*).

139.—Notes :—1° The 3 sg. pres. Indic. was, in O.I. *tét* (i.e. *téro*, still used in U.). The root is ued, also found in past tense. *Téigseann* is modelled on the other persons (root,—steigh). 2° *Deigseas* (*deacás*)—Munster—is analogical. 'oo *cuað* when prototonic gives *deacaird* (U. and Conn.). The Munster form is due to the fut. *raġaird*, while the U. and Conn. fut. *racard* is due to *deacaird*.

140.—II.—*tigim* (*taġaim*), I come.

Pres. Indic.—*tigim-se*, *taġaim-se*, etc. Pl.—*tigimio-ne*, *taġaimio-ne*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(oo) *tiginn-se*, *taġainn-se*, etc. Pl.—(oo) *tigimis-ne*, *taġamis-ne*, etc.

Past Indic.—(oo) *tánaġ-sa* (*tána-sa*), *tanaís-se*, *táinig seisean*. Pl.—(oo) *tánamair-ne*, *tánaibair-se*, *tánadar san* (*tángadar*).

Future.—*tioċfar-sa*, etc. Pl.—*tioċfaimio-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Conditional.—(oo) *tioçfaimn-se*, etc. Pl. (oo) *tioçfaimis-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Imperative.—*tigim-se* (*taǵaim-se*), *tair-se*, *tigead* (*taǵað*) *seisean* (*sise*). Pl.—*tigimis-ne* (*taǵaimis-ne*), etc. (usual endings).

Pres. Subj.—τιγεαρ-σα (ταγεαρ-σα), etc. Pl. τιγιμιο-νε  
(ταγιμιο-νε), etc.

Past Subj.—τιγινν-σε (ταγιαμ्म-σε)—same as Impf.  
Indic. without το.

Vb. noun.—*teact* (G. *teacta*); O.I. *tuidecht* (from *dotiag*) and *tichtu* (from *do-icc*). We still have *tigseact* (*turdeact*) esp. in poetry.—*bodairí na tire ag tigseact ar a scapail* (*An Spailpín Fánaí*).

**Participle**.—*tigte, tagta, tagaite.*

Pres. Auton.—*tigtear*, *tagtar*. Impf.—*tigti*, *tagti*.

Past „ *tánatas.* Fut.—*tiocpar.* Conditional.—  
*tiocfi.*

Imper. „ tigtear, tigtear, tagtar, tagtar.

## Notes.

1° Pres. Indic.—Deuteronic forms are lost, as in all the other tenses. (O.I. do-icc, etc.).  $\tau\alpha\varsigma$ - comes from  $\tau\iota\varsigma$ - through  $\tau e\alpha\varsigma$ - . The short form  $\tau\iota\varsigma$  in 3 sg. is mostly used in— $\tau\iota\varsigma$  i.e. . . .  $\eta i \tau\iota\varsigma$  te—can, cannot.

2° Past.—*ánaS* is the preterital stem corresponding to *-is* (O.I. -icc). 2nd sg. also written *tángráis*, but the *s* is silent in *Uibh Laothaire* and *Corca Dhuibne*. It is silent also in pl.

3° Fut.—-c- comes from -ς- under influence of ρ (=n), and is *broad* and written c (not ς).

4° Condit.—Here “c” remains in 2 sg., although “f” is pronounced “f” and not “h.” The same remark applies to *tiocpar*, *tiocphi* (Aut.).

5° Imper.—The 2 sg. ταιρ is from—either (a) to-air-icc, or (b) rethim (ριτιμ), like φοίρ, help.

III.—**im-ti-sim**, I go away.

141.—In form, a compound of *téi-sim* (vb. n. *im-teact*). But it has passed over to the -*s*, class. Fut.—*imteocas-sa*, etc. Cond.—*o'imteocainn-se*, etc.

Many other verbs, too, have passed over to the -*s* class, with -*oc-*, -*eoc-* in fut. and cond.—*iompuisim*, I turn (O.I. 3 sg. *im-soí*). But vb. n.—*iompoð* (*iompaðil*). *Téarnuisim*, I depart, die, steal away, etc. Vb. n. *téarnam* (<*snior*), *téarnóð* (anal. from *iompoð*). *Éiri-sim*, I rise (root *reg*). Vb. n.—*éirse*. *fiafrui-sim*, I enquire. Vb. n. *fiafrarðe*. *Teangmuisim* (*teagmuisim*), I meet, happen, chance (Compound of -*s*). Vb. n.—*teangmáil*, *teangbáil* (owing to *gáðan*). *Teastui-sim*, I am wanting, missed, needful to ; I die, etc. Vb. n.—*teastáil*, *teastabáil*. In U.I. MSS. common in the sense of "die." —*Cáro fir Lundam gan contabairt ó teastais* (Elegy on *eoðan Ruad Ó Néill*)—the London men (the English in Ireland) are out of danger since he died.

IV.—**oo-geiðim**, I get, find.

142.—Pres. Indic.—*oo-geiðim-se*, etc. (Absolute).

*fagam-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Impft. Indic.—*oo-geiðinn-se*, etc. (Absolute). *fagamn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Past Indic.—*fuaras-sa*, etc. (the same in Dependent).

Fut. Indic.—*oo-geobao-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *fuigearo-sa*, etc. (Dependent).

Condit.—*oo-geobainnse*, etc. (Abs.). *fuiginn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Imper.—*fagam-se*, *faið-se*, *fagð seisean*, *faiðmis-ne*, *faiðró-se*, *faiðois sin*.

Subj.—Pres.—*fagao-sa*, etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Same as *Dependent Impft. Indic.*

Auton.—Pres. Indic.—*oo-geiðtear* (Abs.). *factar* (*fagtar*) Dep.

Impft. Indic.—*oo-geiðti* (Abs.). *facti* (*faiðti*) Dep.

Past Indic.—Abs. and Dep.—*fuartas*, *frit*, *fuarað*.

Fut. Indic.—*oo-geobtar* (Abs.). *fuisfar* (*fuis-tear*) Dep.

Condit.—*oo-geobtaoi* (-*tai*, -*ti*. Abs.). *fuisfi*, *fuissti* Dep.

Imper.—*factar*, *fastar*. Pres. Subj. the same. Past.—*faistí*, *fastí*.

Vb. n.—*fasail*, G. *fasala* (<*fo-sabala*).

### Notes.

1° The deuterotonic forms come from *oo-geib-*, the prototonic form *fo-sab-*. The slender *-geib-* is due to the reduplicated fut. stem *geob-* (O.I. *géb-*).

2° *Oo-* is often dropped in the absol. forms (§ retaining its aspiration). It is kept usually in rel. clauses, assuming the function of a relative.

3° *fasaim*<*fo-sabaim*. Sometimes spelled *fasbam*, but needlessly, as *-v-* is lost in speech. § is necessary—to denote the *diphthong*.

4° *fuiseao*<*fo-geobao* is pronounced, in Munster, as *fasao* (Subj.<*fo-sabao*). This leads to the widespread confusion between Condit. and past Subj.

5° In mod. I. (as in O.I.) the vb. n., participle and imper. are prototonic (except in Munster, in vbs. like *tiomáin*, with 1st syll. short, 2nd long. Here the long vowel attracts the accent).

6° *factar*<*fastar*, where *t=n* unvoices §, giving c (*t-* being then restored).

### V.—*Sabaim*, I take, go, etc.

143.—A *simple* verb, found in preceding *compound*. It has an é-fut. *geobao* (earlier, *gébad*; §, unaspirated). The neg. and interrog. forms are:—ni *geobao*, an *ngeobaro* sé? etc., as compared with ni *bfuiseao*, an *bfuisri* sé, of the compound (IV). In ni *bfuatas*, ni seems to eclipse. It does not. It aspirates f, as usual, and v comes, not from f-, but from u. I.e., it is a *consonantal glide* from i to u. Then all the prototonic forms take v- after ni by analogy. (Except in Pass. and Auton. where ni does not aspirate—ni *factar*, ni *fuartas*).

144.— VI.—**Do-ȝním**, I do, make.

Pres. Indic.—**do-ȝním-se**, **do-ȝnír-se**, **do ȝníonn seisean** (Abs.) **ðéanaim-se**, etc. (Dep.—**ðeimím-se**, etc. Munster)

Pl.—**do-ȝnímio-ne**, **do-ȝníonn siþ-se**, **do-ȝnío siðosan** (Abs.) **ðéanaimio-ne**, etc. (Dep.).—**ðeimímio-ne** (Munster).

Impft. Indic.—**do-ȝnínn-se**, **do-ȝníteð-sa**, **do ȝníð sei-sean** (Abs.) **ðo-ȝnímis-ne**, **ðo ȝníð siþ-se**, **ðo-ȝníðis sm** (Abs.) **ðéanaimn-se** (**ðeiminn-se**, Munster), etc. (usual endings. Dep.)

Past Indic.—**ðo ríneas-sa**, **ðo rínnis-se**, **ðo-rinne seisean** (Abs.) **ðo ríneamair-ne**, **ðo-ríneabair-se**, **ðo-ríneadair san** (Abs.) **ðearnas-sa**, **ðearnaís-se**, **ðearna** (**ðearnaið**) **seisean** (Dep.) **ðearnamair-ne**, etc. (usual endings) Dep.

Fut.—Abs. and Dep.—**ðéanfæð-sa**, etc. (usual endings).

Condit.—(**ðo**) **ðéanfainn-se**, etc. (**ní**) **ðéanfainn-se**, etc.

Imperat.—**ðeimím-se** (**ðéanaim-se**), etc. (as usual).

Subj.—Pres.—**ðeimeð-sa** (**ðéanð-sa**), etc. Past.—**ðeiminnse** (**ðéanaimse**), etc.

Auton. (and Pass.) :—

Pres. Indic.—**ðo ȝnítear** (Abs.). **ðeintear** (**ðéantar**). Dep.

Impft. Indic.—**ðo ȝníti** (Abs.). **ðeinti** (**ðéantai**). (Dep.)

Past Indic.—**ðo ríneð** (Abs.). **ðearnað**. (Dep.)

Fut. Indic.—**ðéanfar**. Condit.—**ðéanfi** (**ðéanfæði**).

Imper. and Pres. Subj.—**ðeintear** (**ðéantar**). Past Subj.—**ðeinti** (**ðéantai**).

## Notes.

1° In Munster I. the pres. stem is usually **ðeim-** (also in Impft. Indic., Imper., Subj.) **ðéan-** being reserved for Fut. and Condit. (on analogy of **beir-** pres. stem, **þear-** fut.).

2° The pres. and impft. Indic. abs. forms are nearly obsolete in Munster.

3° Instead of the past Indic. as in paradigm, **ðeimeð-sa**, etc., are usual in Munster, both Abs. and Dep.

4° The deuterotonic forms of the fut. are now seldom used. The fut. and condit. show a blend of two types—

the e- fut., and the f- (or b-) fut.—*oo géanád*, or *do géan*, and *oo-géanfád*, *géanfád*. K. often has *do déan*, instead of *do géan*, owing to the prototonic forms.

5° In past Aut., instead of *oo rinneadó*, etc., *oo rímeadó*, *níor rímeadó*, etc., are usual in Munster.

6° Vb. n.—*géanam* (G.—*géanta*). Participle—*géanta*.

#### 145.— VII.—**beirim** (and Compounds). I bear, I carry.

Pres. Indic.—*beirim-se*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(i) *beirinn-se*, etc. Past.—*rúgas-sa*, etc.

Fut. Indic.—*bearfád-sa*, etc. Condit.—(i) *bearfainn-se*, etc.

Imper.—*beirim-se*, *beir-se*, etc. Subj.—Pres.—*beiread-sa*, etc.

Past Subj.—*beirinn-se*, etc.

Aut. and Pass :—

Pres. Indic.—*beirtear* (-tear). Impft.—*beirtí* (*beirti*).

Past.—*rúgað*. Fut.—*bearfar*. Cond.—*bearfi* (-fai).

Imper.—*beirtear* (-tear).

Pres. Subj.—*beirtear* (-tear). Past.—*beirtí* (-ti).

#### Notes.

1° The past tense is a compound of *ro* and *-ug* (O.I. -ucc). Cf.—*tug*.

2° The fut. (primary, and secondary) is a blend of the e- fut. and the f- fut. K. *oo bear* : mod. *oo bearfád*.

Vb. n.—*breit* (G.—*beirte*). Participle.—*beirte*.

#### 146.— VIII.—**do-beirim**, I give, bring, etc.

Pres. Indic.—*oo beirim-se*, etc. (Abs.). *tabraim-se*, etc. (Dep.).

Impf. Indic.—*oo beirinn-se*, etc. (Abs.) *tabrainn-se*, etc. (Dep.).

Past Indic.—(i) *tugas-sa*, etc.—(Abs. and Dep.).

Fut. Indic.—*oo bearfád-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *tabarfád-sa*, etc. (Dep.).

Condit.—*oo bearfainn-se*, etc. (Abs.). *tabarfainn-se*, etc. (Dep.).

Imper.—*tugaim-se* (*tabraimse*), *tabair-se*, *tugao* (*tabrao*) *seisean*.

*Tugaimis-ne* (*tabraimis ne*), *tugaro-se* (*tabraio-se*), *tugarois* (*tabraiois*) *sin.*

Subj.—*tugao-sa* (*tabrao-sa*), etc. Past.—*tugaimn-se* (*tabraimn-se*), etc.

Vb. n.—*tabairt* (G.—*tabarta*). Participle.—*tabarta*, *tugta*.

Pass. (and Auton.) :—

Pres. Indic.—*oo beirtar*, *tabrtar*, *tugtar* (Munster).

Impft.—*oo beirti*, *tabrtai*, *tugti* (Munster).

Past.—*oo tugao*. Fut.—*oo bearfar*, *tabrfar*.

Condit.—*oo bearfí*, *tabrfí* (-fai).

Imper.—*tugtar* (Munster) ; *tabrtar*.

Subj.—*tugtar* (Munster) ; *tabrtar* (Pres.).  
*tugti* (,,) ; *tabrtai* (Past.).

### Notes.

1° *Tabraim* is the regular prototonic form of *oo-beirim*. Instead of this, a present formed from the perf. stem *tug-* is much used in Munster, not only as dep. but also abs. *beirim-se*, etc., are used (but with *oo-*) in asseverations like—*beirim-se a burdeacas leis an Achair Siorurðe* (Séaona)—I thank the Eternal Father for it.

2° In the Impft.—the Munster forms are :—*oo tugaimn-se*, etc., instead of those given in the paradigm.

3° The vb. n. was at first *tabart*, but even in O.I. *tabairt* also is used as nominative.

### 147.— IX.—*Deirim* (*a deirim*), I say.

*Absolute.*

*Relative.*

*Dependent.*

Pres. Indic.

*beirim-se*, etc. *a deirim-se*, etc. *abraim-se*, etc.

Impft. Indic.

*beirminn-se*, etc. *a deirminn-se*, etc. *abrainnse*, *abarca-sa*, etc.

Past Indic.

1. <i>tabart-sa</i>	}	<i>tabart-sa</i> , etc.	(Same as Absolute).
2. <i>tabrais-se</i>			
3. <i>tabairt</i>			(Usual endings in pl.).

*seisean*

## Fut. Indic.

<i>Absolute.</i>	<i>Relative.</i>	<i>Dependent</i>
DEARFAD-SA, etc.	ADÉARFAD-SA, etc.	ABRÓCAO-SA, etc.
		Condit.
DÉARPAIMN-SE, ,,	ADÉARPAIMN-SE, ,,	ABRÓCAIMN-SE, ,,
		Imper.
ABRAIM-SE, ABAIR-SE, ABRAO SEISEAN, etc.		Always prototonic.
Pres. Subj.—ABRAO-SA, etc.	Past Subj.—ABRAIMN-SE, etc.	
Autonomous (and Passive) :—Indic.—Pres.—DEIRTEAR (abs.), ADÉIRTEAR (direct rel.), ABARTAR (dep.). Impf.—DEIRTI, ADÉIRTI, ABARTI. Past.—DUBRAO, ADUBRAO; DUBRTAS, ADUBRTAS. Fut.—DÉARFAR, ADÉARFAR, ABRÓCTAR (ABRÓFAR). Condit.—DÉARFI, ADÉARFI, ABRÓCTAI (ABRÓFI). Imperat. and pres. Subj.—ABARTAR. Past Subj.—ABARTI. Vb. n.—RÁO (G. RÁRÓTE). Participle—RÁRÓTE, ABARTA.		

## Notes.

1° The *deirim* forms resist aspiration :—ni *deirim*; I do not say ; isé *deirim*, this is what I say. They are nearly always used as dep. forms in Munster in all the tenses of the indic.

2° The rel. forms are *direct* only. *Oblique*. rels. take the dep. forms :—an té go n-abartar air, he of whom people say. But in Munster, also :—an té go noeirtear air (see note 1°).

3° Instead of *deireann* (3. sg. and 2 pl.) a short form *deir* is common in Munster.

4° ADUBART (O.I. as-ru-burt) shows confusion of *ao-* and *as*, and substitution of *oo-* for *ro-*. The 2 sg. is an s- preterite, 1 and 3 sg. t- preterites ; but both s- and t- are dropped in pl.

5° The vb. n. in O.I. was *epert* (now *abairt*=speech, phrase).

## X.—TOIRBHRIM, I deliver, present, etc.

148.—A compound of *deirim*, but conjugated as a simple vb. The vb. n. is *TOIRBEART*, *TOIRBIRT*. FÓBRAIM, I attack, begin, etc. is another comp. of *deir*, now treated as a simple vb. with vb. n. *FÓBAIRT*.

## XI.—(Do)-cím, I see.

## Absolute.

Pres. Indic.—cím-se, cír-se, cionn seisean.  
cimíne, cionn síbse, cír síad san.

## Dependent.

peicím-se, etc. (regular endings).

## Absolute.

Impft. Indic.—cinn-se (etc.—but ció- in 3 sg., 2 pl.).

## Dependent.

peicinn-se, etc. (regular endings).

## Absolute.

Past Indic.—oo connac-sa  
,, connacis-se  
,, connac seisean } Pl. oo connacmair-ne  
etc. (regular endings)

## Dependent.

peaca-sa, peacaís-se, peacair seisean.  
peacamaire, etc.

## Absolute.

Fut. Indic.—cipeao-sa, etc. (regular endings).

## Dependent.

peicpeao-sa, etc.

Condit.—cipinn-se, etc. (regular endings).  
peicpinn-se, etc.

Imperat.—peicím-se, peic-se, etc. (usual endings).  
*Always prototonic.*

Pres. Subj.—peiceao-sa, etc. Past.—peicinn-se, etc.  
*Always prototonic.*

Pass. and Auton.—Indic.—Pres.—cítéar, peictear.

Impft.—citi, peicti.

Past.—oo connactas, peactas. Fut.—cipar, peicpar.

Condit.—cipi, peicpi.

Vb. n.—peiscint (peicsint). G.—peisceana, peicseana, F.

Participle.—peicte.

## Notes.

1° Cim-se, etc., are for do-cim-se, etc. O.I. 3 sg. was do-ci, from the prototonic form of which come the dep. forms (with f- added). feicim-se is for faicim-se. Cf. O.I. maic>meic, mic.

2° Besides do connac, do connacas, and do connarcas (root vearc-) occur. feaca (Munster), faca (facas) is a reduplicated perfect (with f- added. <ad-ce-cha).

3° feiscint (O.I. aiccsiu, G. aiccsen, D. aiccsin) shows init. f-, change of -aic- to -eic- metathesis of c and s, and addition of a final -t.

## XII.—Cloisim, cluinim, I hear.

149.—Now simple, regular vbs. O.I. ro-cluinethar. Past Indic.—do cloiseas, do clumeas, and also (do) cuala (do-cualias) from O.I. perf. ro-cuala. Vb. n.—clos, cloisint, cloistim ; cluimsint (due to feic-sint).

## XIII.—Risim, roicim, I reach.

150.—Risim<O.I. ro-icc (cf. do-icc=mod. tis-). The aspirated -s- may be due to roicim. Past Indic.—rásas (cf. tánaS). Vb. n.—riactain, roctam.—Roichim<O.I. ro-saig, reaches—sus a roiceann sarbreas (T.B.B.)—to whom wealth comes. Vb. n.—roctam. We now use sroicim, sroisim, conjugated as simple verbs. Vb. n.—sroicint, sroisint.

## XIV.—itim, I eat.

151.—Fut.—iosao-sa (iosfao-sa), etc. Condit.—d'iosainn-se, etc. Vb. n. ite (not itead), G.—itte. Participle—itte. The fut. is the only example remaining of the s- Fut.

## XV.—feadar, I know.

152.—The only *deponent* vb. in mod. I. (O.I. ro-fitir, knows). Used only in neg. or virtually neg. sentences, and with either past or pres. meaning. 3 sg. past, feidir (common in Munster). Conjugation :—feadar-sa, feadrais-se, feadair (feidir) seisean.—feadramair-ne, feadraibair-se, feadraadar-san. Vb. n.—fios, G. feasa.

### XVI.—TÁIM, I am (Substantive Verb).

153.—Indic.—Actual pres.—TÁIM-se, TÁOI-se, TÁ SEISEAN.—TÁIMÍO-ne, TÁTÁOI-se, TÁO SÍAO SAN (these are the abs. forms). Dep.—FUILIMÍO-ne, etc., but FUIL, in 3 sg. and 2 pl.

Habitual pres.—BÍM-se, BÍR-se, BIONN SEISEAN ; BÍMÍO-ne, BIONN SÍB-se (BITI), BÍO SÍAO SAN. (Abs. and Dep.).

Impft.—(OO) BÍNN-se, BÍTEÁ-SA, BÍOÓ SEISEAN ; (OO) BÍMÍS-ne, BÍOÓ SÍBSE, BÍOIS SIN. (Abs. and —without OO—Dep.).

Past abs.—(OO) BÍOS-SA, BÍS-se, BÍ SEISEAN ; (OO) BIOMAIR-ne, BÍOBÁIR-se, BÍOBAR-SAN. Dep.—RABAS-SA, etc. But 3 sg.—RAIB.

Fut.—BEAO-SA, BEIR-se, BEAO SEISEAN ; BEIMÍO-ne, BEAO SÍB-se, BEAO SÍAO SAN. (Abs. and Dep.).

Condit.—(OO) BEIMN-se, BEITEÁ-SA, BEAO SEISEAN ; (OO) BEIMÍS-ne, BEAO SÍBSE, BEAOIS SIN (Abs. and —without OO—Dep.).

Imperat.—BÍM-se, BÍ-se, BÍOÓ SEISEAN ; BÍMÍS-ne, BÍOÓ-se, BÍOIS SIN.

Pres. Subj.—RABAO-SA, RABAI'R-se, RAIB SEISEAN ; RABMÍO-ne, RAIB SÍBSE (RABTAI) RABAO SÍAO SAN.

Past Subj.—BEIMN-se, BEITEÁ-SA, BEAO SEISEAN ; BEIMÍS-ne, BEAO SÍBSE, BEAOIS SIN.

Autonomous :—Pres. Indic.—TÁTÁR, FUILTEAR (Actual); BÍTEAR (Hab.). Impft.—BITI. Past.—OO BÍTEAS (abs.); RABTAS (dep.). Fut.—BEIPÁR. Condit.—BEIPÍ. Imperat.—BÍTEAR. Pres. Subj.—RABTÁR. Past.—BEIPÍ, BEITI.

Vb. n.—BEIT (B-).

Participle.—BÍETTE (mostly as *Part. of Necessity*).

### Notes.

1° The neg. forms of FUIL- are NILIM-se, etc. (<NI FUILIM-se). Auton.—NILTEAR.

2° Instead of TÁOI, there is also TÁIR, and TÁ TÚ ; instead of TÁTÁOI, TÁ SÍB.

3° The spelling BÍOM-se, BÍOMN-se, is wrong.

4° In the Past abs.—1, 2 sg. and all the pl. forms are re-constructions from 3 sg. (O.I. boí, baí>óí). The dep. forms are near O.I. enclitic forms :—1 sg.—·ROBA (we

have added -s) ; 3 sg. · robæ, · rabæ (early mod. raiþe, now raiþ) ; 1 pl. · robammar, 2.—· robaid (now rabbair), 3.—· robatar, · rabatar.

5° The short vowels of Fut. and Condit. (as found in Munster) reflect, not O.I. 1st and 2nd. Fut., but O.I. pres. and past Subj. Some of their uses are clearly Subj. E.g.—fan go mberð sé annso—Wait till he be here (Subj. of indefinite time). Cf. fan go vtagaird sé—Wait until he come. Here, however, U.I. uses the no- Subj.—fan go ræb (=raiþ) sé annseo.—Óa mbeað sé annso—If he were here (The mod. classical usage requires *the past Subj.* after óa).

6° The past Subj. forms—binn, etc., given in many books, are altogether spurious, and should not be tolerated. The vb. tā is, in fact, the only vb. (if we except is.—See 154) in which the past Subj. is not the same as the Impft. Indic.

### XVII.—The Copula (is).

154.—Pres. Indic.—Sg. and pl.—is (in all persons). Abs. Dep.—ab, b (see Notes, 2<sup>3</sup>). Or the vb. disappears.

Impft. and Past :—Abs.—Sg. and pl.—ba (all persons); b' before vowel or f. Dep.—ba (see Notes, 5), b' (before vowel, or f), or the vb. disappears.

Fut.—Now nearly obsolete. I once heard, near Céim an Fiarð (W. Cork)—má bus uom é, if it will be mine.

Condit.—ba, bæð, sg. and pl. all persons, Abs. ba, b'—or disappears (Dep.).

Pres. Subj.—ba, ab, a', sg. and pl.

Past Subj.—bæð, ba, b' (before vowels), sometimes ba h- sg. and pl., all persons.

### Notes.

1° All extant forms of is are, etymologically 3 sg. Syntactically, of course, they may be 1st, 2nd, or 3rd person. Such lists as :—1. is mé, I am. 2. is tu, thou art. 3. is é, he is—are absurd. The pronouns here are predicates, not subjects, and the vb. given as 1st or 2nd person is, *de facto*, syntactically 3rd, while the vb. given as 3rd person may be 1st or 2nd.—is mé a bì ann (Subj.—an té a bì ann.—3rd person). is tu pé nœar é

(Subj.—*an tē pē nōear e.*—3rd person). *is é an diabál tu*  
 (Subj. *tu*, 2nd person)!

2° The dep. form pres. disappears after :—(a) *ní*, (*ní n-* before vowel). (b) *nac.* (c) *an ?* (d) *sun* (before consonants, and sometimes before vowels) (e) *muran* (=muna) before consonants (f) oblique rel. before consonants.

3° It appears as *-b*, *-ab* after *sun* (*sometimes* before vowels), *nár*, opt. subj. before vowels (as *a'* before consonants) *muna* (before vowels), the oblique relatives *ar*, *sun*, *n-ar* (before vowels).

4° *bao*, as past tense is wrong. It should be *ba*. Condit. *bao* is permissible, though *ba* is more usual. The Impft. is ignored by other mod. Grammars.

5° In the dep. past *ba* generally combines with preceding *ro*, giving *'rb* (before vowels); before consonants, it disappears, but aspirates. When *ro* is not used *ba* (*bu*) appears before consonants—*an bfear a mbu leis i* (*N. nS. p. 21*)—the man who owned it.

6° The pres. subj. is usually *-b*, *ab*.—*sunb amlaró duit*—the same to you! But in U. and W'ford I. *ba* is common: *so mba hé duit* (U.)—the same to you. *So mba n-amlaró duit* (W'f'd.). In the opt. subj. *suná*, *nará* are common before consonants—*suná' pеarrøe tu e*—may you be the better of it.

7° Past subj.—*Oa mba mait leat e*—if you wished it. *Oa mb'ail teis e*—if he so wished. *Oa mba n-e a bao ann*—if it had been he.

8° There is no vb. n. The want is supplied thus:—*Sagart iseao me, 7 is fearr liom san, ná mé beit am' doctúir*—I am a priest, and I prefer that to *being a doctor*.

### 155.— XVIII.—Remains of Compound Verbs.

1° See exx. in 141.

2° *foðbraim* (*foðrim*), I sacrifice. A comp. of *beirim*, vb. n.—*foðbairt* (*foðirt*).

3° *fuilngim*, I suffer (O.I. 3 sg. fo-loing). Now a simple syncopated vb. (2nd conjug.). Fut.—*fuilngeocao* (*fuiliceocao*). Vb. n.—*fuilng*, *fuilg*, *fuilng*, and U. *fuilstm.*

4° **Tarfaim**—I bark at, urge, etc., vb. n. **tarfann**, **tarfaint**, was a compound also. (O.I. do-seinn, drives).

5° **Foluigim**—I hide, cover, <**fo+luigim**, I lay (lie) under. Vb. n. **folac**. Now conjugated as a simple vb.

6° **Faisnéisim** (**aísnéisim**), I predicate, etc. <O.I. vb. n.—**aisndís** (<as-ind-et, relates). Now treated as *simple*. Vb. n. **aísnéis**, **faisnéis**.

7° **Aólaicim**, **aónaicim**—I bury, vb. n.—**aólaead**, **aólaean**, **aónacaed**. **Aólaean** comes (by metathesis of **t** and **n**) from **aó-anacut** (O.I. aingid, protects).

8° **Cúmouigim**—I defend, cover, etc., vb. n.—**cúmvaed** (<O.I. cumtach, vb. n. of con-utuing, builds).

9° **Tarla**—happened, <O.I. .tarla<do-rala (ro-la) has the two preps. **oo**, and **ro**.

10° **Tuitim**, I fall, vb. n.—*id.* O.I. 3 sg. do-tuit. The old perfect **torcair** occurs in poetry. It comes from do-er, do-ro-chair. The root “cer” is seen in **crion** (**crín**), withered. Cf. O.I. ara-chrin—perishes, and L. *cernuus*, with face towards earth, bowing, etc.

11° **Coimeádaim**, I keep<O.I. comét, vb. n. of the obsolete compound **con.oí**, keeps. U.I. vb. n. **coimead**. In Munster c- is usually slender.

12° **Ionnarbaím**, I banish, is a compound of O.I. ben-.

## CHAPTER VI.

### ADVERBS, Etc.

156.—An Adverb is a word or phrase or clause used to modify the meaning of words expressing action or quality. The modification is various, giving the following classes of adverbs :—A.—Modal. B.—Local. C.—Temporal. D.—Interrogative. E.—Causal. F.—Negative. G.—Quantitative. H.—Multiplicative. I.—Asseverating. J.—Concessive.

#### 157.—A.—Modal Adverbs :—

1° Formed from adjectives by prefixing the prep. *go* (see 159 1°)—*go maic*, well ; *go h-oic*, badly ; *go dána*, boldly ; *go breasg bog*, very easily. But the adj. without *go* is often adverbial :—*ní duibhirt sé ná focail tom díreach mar a teastuis uata* (CMD. 333)—He did not say the words *precisely* as they wanted. *Tóig bog é*—take things easily. Participles are preceded by *go*, only when the participial meaning is obscured or lost.—*Abaír amach é go h-oscainte* (CMD. 333)—Say it out openly.

2° From nouns :—'*ná shiúl*, up (out of bed) ; *cár ar bít*, at all ; *ar an gcumha san*, thus ; *ar eisín báis*, with the greatest difficulty ; *i n-aisce*, free, gratis ; *oé gseit*, suddenly ; *m-aistear*, in vain ; *ar soðar*, at a trot ; *nílím ar buile ná ar báinriúe*, I'm not in the least bit furious.

3° Adverbial prefixes :—*an* (*ana*), very ; *go h-ana-maic*, very well ; *bít*, lasting ; *bít-buan*, everlasting ; *buan*, lasting ; *buaín-tseasmach*, persevering ; *teat*, half ; *go teat-amadanta*, half-foolishly.

4° From pronouns :—*amharó*, thus ; *mar sm*, like that ; *teis*, also ; *freisim* (Conn.), also.

## B.—Local Adverbs :—

(a).—The Point	Rest at	Motion towards	Motion from
1. Here.	annso, i òfus	anall, i leit	anonn.
2. There	annsan } tall annsúd }	anonn, sall	anall.
3. Above	tuaS	suas	anuas.
4. Below	tios	sios	anios.
5. North	tuard	ó tuard	atcuaird.
6. South	teas	ó deas	andeas.
7. East	toir	soir	anoir.
8. West	tíar	siar	aniar.
9. Inside	istis	isteac	amac.
10. Outside	amuis	amac	isteach.

(b) In addition to these we have :—lastuard, on the N. side ; laistead, on the S. side ; lastoir, on the E. side ; lastiar, on the W. side ; lastuas, on the upper side ; lastios, on the lower side ; lastall, on the other side ; laismuis, outside ; laistis, inside. All these become compound preps. by adding *de* :—lastuard *de'n caisleán*, north of the castle ; lastall *de'n lórdan*, on the other side of the Jordan ; laistis *de' dà bliain*, within 2 years (temporal) ; laismuis *de Séadana*, with the exception of Séadana.

(c) From prep.+noun.—i dtaisge, in safe keeping ; i dtomas, in store for ; ar tosac, in front ; cum cinn, ahead ; ó céile, apart.

## C.—Temporal Adverbs :—

1° Noun-forms, with or without the article :—anois, now ; arís, again ; inoiu, to-day ; inoé, yesterday ; anocá, to-night ; aréir, last night ; anuirid, last year.

2° The A. of time :—tamall, for a while ; seactmain, for a week.

3° The G. of time :—In Dia luam, etc., dia is a G. of time. K. often has G. of time with gáca :—gáca marone, every morning ; gáca bliadna, every year. These are due to mi gáca bliadna—a month of every year, etc.

4° D. or A. with prepositions :—ar maróin, in the morning ; um trátnóna, in the evening ; umanoirtear, the day after to-morrow ; de to is o'oróce, by day and night ; coisgróis(-deas) is lá inóiu, this day fortnight (in the past) ; coisgróis ó inóiu, this day fortnight (in the future).

5° Prep. pronouns :—riam, ever (*lit.* before it) ; ceana, already (*lit.* without it). Coróce, ever (<co noróce) used of the fut. or, in a general way, of all time.

D.—**Interrogative Adverbs** :—Cá ? where ? whence ? whither ? Caoð ? where ? whither ? Catoin, ca n-uair ? when ? Cionnus, conus ? how ? An fada ? Cia an fáid ? how long ? Cao e mar ? Goroé mar (U.) ? how ? Cao mar geall ar . . . . what about ? Cao uime (cuige) ? wherefore ?

E.—**Causal Adverbs** :—Oa brið sm, uime sm, therefore ; cuige sm, for that purpose ; oa bárr san, oa deasgaib sm, in consequence of that (the latter of bad or untoward results).

F.—**Negative Adverbs** :—ni, nior ; ca, car (U.) ; nað, ná, nár.

G.—**Quantitative Adverbs** :—

1° The A. of Extent in Degree (see 175 A 4) :—ca se pas beag fuar—it is somewhat cold ; bi sé ar meisge iarractin—he was just a trifle tipsy ; mactnuigean sé siúd an iomao—he thinks too much.

2° D. or A. with prep.—ar eisín, with difficulty ; so leor, enough ; go téir, entirely.

3° Intensive adv. prefixes are, of course, quantitative: sár-, ró-, rioghs- very.

H.—**Multiplicative Adverbs** :—pé do, twice ; seacht òpearra, ever so much better ; teat-óéanta, half-done.

I.—**Asseverating Adverbs** :—so deimín (so dearbta), really ; so deimín & so dearbta ('am briatar & 'am basa), really and truly ; dar fiað, darfa liat, dar fiað na feola, dar fiað & fiaðar—all strong forms of “assuredly.”

J.—Concessive Adverbs :—'ná tdiaró sin, for all that ; ar a són san, notwithstanding, etc., etc.

### 158.—Adverbial Clauses :—

1° Stereotyped :—pé scéal é, at all events ; pé'r doman é, anyway ; tā mb'é fém é, even he.

2° pé cuma 'n-a bfuair sé é, however he got it ; pé ait 'ná ngeobao, wherever I go ; tā luigead tu, ni teanb tu, you may be small, but you're no child.—Such clauses modify the main clause in the various ways set forth in 156.

### 159.—

### Notes on the Adverbs.

1° The prep. go (with) forms adverbs only with teor and téir. Otherwise go (=to) is used—go mór=to a great extent.

2° The spellings suas, sios, soir, siar are erroneous.

3° Teas (instead of deas) because of the frequent conjunction—tuaró γ teas.

4° In ó tuaró, ó deas, ó is certainly *not* the prep. ó. It is either the prep. fo, or a form of the copula. Oimtis sé san airo fa tuaró (>ó tuaró), he went towards the point that was North.

5° istig, amuig, show the D., isteac, amac, the A. of teac.

6° Lasmuig, and all the forms in 157 B. (b), except laistig, derive their -s- from the latter=la-istig (la being a weak form of leat, side).

7° Aris<O.I. a fhrith-éssi, *his back-track*. Now used of both numbers and genders, and all three persons.

8° inoim, D. of dia, day, with art.

9° Anoict, D. of noct (L. nox) with art.—*the night*.

10° Dia Luain, Dia Máirt, Dia Céadaom', Diardaom, Dia h-áoine, Dia Satárn, Dia Domnaig, are adverbs—on Monday, etc. The noun forms are :—An Luán, An Máirt, An Céadaom, An Diardaom, An Áoine, An Satárn, An Domnaic.

11° Leis, also, is sometimes used, in negative sentences, where we might rather expect ac cóm beag (ac an oiread, U.). Dubairt sé ná ráib sé ann, γ ni ráib,

teis—He said he wasn't there, and neither was he. South of Ireland English employs "too" in the same way:—A.—" You don't look well." B.—" I'm not, too." The "raison d'être" of the usage is the fact that such negative sentences are a *re-assertion* of the preceding negative statement.

## CHAPTER VII.

### CONJUNCTIONS.

160.—The Conjunction is the part of speech which is used to connect phrases, clauses, sentences, and co-ordinate words :—**Phrases** :—*bí sé ar meisge, é ar dears-buile*—he was drunk *and* raging mad. **Clauses** :—*bí sé ar buile nuair aoubairt sé an caint sín*—he was mad *when* he said that. **Sentences** :—*bí a dhá cois briste. Dhá brié sín, ni féadfao sé siubal*—his two legs were broken, *so* he couldn't walk. **Words** :—*tánaidh go léir, roin os é aosta*—They all came, young *and* old.

Conjunctions are either co-ordinating, or subordinating. The former connect clauses (phrases, words) of equal grammatical rank. The latter connect dependent clauses with the main clause.

**Co-ordinating Conjunctions** :—These are either :—(a) **Cumulative (Copulative)**, which *add* one statement to another. (b) **Adversative** :—which *set one statement against another*. (c).—**Illative (Inferential)**—which *point to a conclusion arrived at*.

#### (a) **Copulative Conjunctions** :—

1° *agus*, and (*as, is, 's*). Often *et*,—a contraction of *L.*—*bí an saróbir 's an dáróbir i ngrád leis (Eośan Cór)*—Rich and poor were in love with him !

2° *roin . . . agus*—both . . . and.—*bí ceannsa le cás, roin carair é aescarair*—Be gentle with all, both friend and enemy.

#### (b) **Adversative Conjunctions** :—

1° *nó, else (or else)*.—*ni fuláir nó tá tuirse air*—he must be (a strong man) or else he's tired,

2° **Act**, but.—*Ní meisge fé n̄oear é, ac dearsionhaointeas*—Not intoxication caused it, but downright idleness.

(c) **Illative Conjunctions** :—*Oá b̄ris sín*, therefore ; *m̄ar sín*, so ; *má's eab*, so.

### 161.—Subordinating Conjunctions :—

1° **Modal**—*pé cuma n'a b̄fuair sé i*—however he got it.

2° **Local**—*m̄ar a ráib an sagart*—where the priest was.

3° **Temporal**.—*sul a dtiocfaró an Domnac*—before Sunday comes.

4° **Causal**.—*n̄ilir-se cionntač ann, ó nac tu a dein é*—you're not responsible, as you didn't do it.

5° **Final**.—(denoting purpose).—*sul a mbeinn dérdeanac.* (S.)—lest I should be late.

6° **Consecutive** (denoting result).—*Tá oireadó san ceana agam air gur dōic liom go n̄iosad é* (S.)—I'm so fond of him that I think I'll eat him.

7° **Quantitative**—*is fearr an mait atá ná an tó a mait do bi*—Present goods are twice as good as past ones.

8° **Concessive** :—*bioð go ráib 'fios agam*—although I knew.

9° **Conditional** :—The clause containing the condition, is called the **Protasis**, that containing the conclusion, the **Apodosis**. *má*, if.—Implies that the condition is, was, will, or would be verified, or else leaves it an open question, implying neither non-fulfilment, nor serious doubt. It can be used :—

With pres. Indic.—*má tá sé ann, labrað se*—if he's here, let him speak ; *má fágann tusa mé, is cuma mé nō na daill* (Lúc. 48)—if you leave me, I'm no better than the blind.

With the past Indic.—*má támis aon droc-sceal, nior airigeas-sa é*—if bad news came, I didn't hear it.

With the Fut.—*má b̄erð se annso i mbairneac*—if he is here to-morrow.

With the Impft.—*má bioð se ann*—if he was there (habitually).

With the Condit.—*má b̄ead se oireamhnač ouit*—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would !).—*Oá, if* :—

- (a) Used in mod. I. only with past Subj. (or Condit.).
- (b) The *time* referred to may be past, pres. or fut.
- (c) The condition is either *unreal* (i.e., *not verified* in past or pres., or *not verifiable* in the fut.), or at least *very doubtful* :—

A.—**Actual pres.**—Óða *ctasao* an sagart ahois—if the priest were to come now.

B.—**Habitual pres.**—Ó' fheadhaim é óéanam aon uair óða mba mait liom é—I could do it any time, if I wanted to.

C.—**Past.**—Óða *cteigead* sé ann gac lá anuinnó—If he went there every day last year. (Impft.)—Óða n-abrao sé (CMO. 93), if He had said (Plupft.).

D.—**Fut.**—Óða *ctasao* Seán i mbáireac—If S. were to come to-morrow.

Muna, munar, if not, unless (O.I. mani), the neg. of mā :—

With the Pres. Indic. actual :—Muna ñfun sé annso—if he is not here. Pres. Indic. habitual :—Muna mbionn sé fém ann—if he is not there himself (habitually).

**Pres. Hab. in future sense** :—Muna noemin rúo orm (Lúc. 14)—If you do not do as I tell you. (Or *oemin* may be pres. subj.).

With past indic.—Muna ráib sé ann—if he wasn't there.

With the Fut.—Muna mberd ciatl agat—if you won't have sense.

With the Impft.—Muna *ctasao* sé i n-am—if he didn't come (habitually) in time.

With the Condit.—Muna mbeao Seán—Only for S. The neg. of óða is either muna (with Past Subj.) or óða mba ná (followed by the Condit.) :—1° Óða mba ná beao aon cùis eile aici (CMO. 25)—If she had had no other reason. 2° Óða mba ná beao Oia ag cabhrú linn te sion—If God were not always helping us. But note the difference between “Óða mba ná” and “muna.” E.g., in ex. 1° it is implied that *she had other reasons*. i.e.—the negative supposition “ná beao aon cùis eile aici” is *unreal*. “Muna mbeao” would leave it an open question. So ex. 2° implying,

as it does, the *unreality* of the supposition “ná beadh Tír a sas caibhru linn de shíor,” virtually asserts the truth :—Biomn Tír a sas caibhru linn de shíor.

Acht go, provided that, if only (O.I. acht ro, with Subj.)—aict ná cuirfi pearsaing uinntí (S.), provided that she were not “riled.” Distinguish from :—(a) acht go=when, until.—Acht go dtáinig na h-Allmúrais—until the foreigners came. (b) acht go, except that—acht go dtáinig sé siúd isteach—except that that fellow came in.

10° Demonstrative Conjunctions :—So, that, *lit.* until that, so that ; with ro>sur. This is the ordinary particle for *affirmative* indirect speech.—Oeir sé go mbeidh sé annso i mbáireac—he says that he will be here to-morrow. It also introduces a noun-clause to act as subj. or pred. to “is,” or as appositional subject or object after other verbs :—As subj.—B’fériong go dtiocfaidh sé inóiu—Maybe he’d come to-day. As pred.—’Sé easta b’i orm go dtiocfaidh—My fear was that he would come. As object.—Oeimh é fósairt go scuirfeadh an cime cum báis—Have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death.

The corresponding neg. conjunctions are ná, náct, nár :—(a) Oeir sé ná tiocfaidh sé a tuille—He says he won’t come any more. (b) Is óidic tiomsa náct sagart i n-aon cor é—I think he’s not a priest at all. (c) Oubhart leis nár maist liom dui ann—I told him I shouldn’t like to go.

### 11° Interrogative Conjunctions :—

(a) Ni feadóar an dtiocfaidh sé inóiu—I wonder will he come to-day. Here an not only *modifies* the clause—tiocfaidh sé, but also *connects* the latter with ni feadóar, thus uniting the functions of adv. and conj. So with the other *interrog.* adverbs (157 D) :—

(b) Is veascain a ráid catom a tiocfaidh sé—It is hard to say when he’ll come.

(c) Ni fios o’aoinne conus a déimeann sé é—No one knows how he does it.

(d) Ni turigim i n-aon cor caidh cuipe sur oem sé é—I cannot understand why he did it.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### PREPOSITIONS.

162.—The Preposition is the part of speech that serves, with a noun, pronoun, or noun-equivalent to make up a qualifying phrase, either substantival, adjectival or adverbial (Syntax 303). Preps. are either simple or compound. A.—Simple Prepositions :—

1° Governing D.—oo, to, for ; oe, from, off, of, etc. ; o, from ; a, as, out of ; ag, at, etc. (with prons. sometimes *partitive*—curo agamn, some of us) ; os, above ; go, with (nearly obsolete) ; roim, before (O.I. re).

2° Governing the A. only (orig.) :—ie, with, etc. ; tre, through ; go, to ; um, about, etc. ; roir, between (with D. in pl., roir fearainb  $\gamma$  mnainb—both men and women) ; amat, as (now only with 3 sg. neut. suffixed pron.—amtaró, like this) ; san, without ; seac, past ; tar, over, beyond (and, in asseverations, var).

3° Governing (orig.) D. or A.—m,—in (*rest*, D), into (*motion* A) ; ar, for, because of (now often “on”) ; fe (fo, fa, faoi), under, towards, etc. ; for, on (now only used in compounds, like formao, forlamas, etc.).

In addition to the above, other simple preps. are found only in compounds (nouns, verbs, adjectives) :—

(a) ad, to, L. ad.—atá (L. ad-stat), aram, to count < av-riom.

(b) O.I. cen (=san) in ceann-tar, the district *on this side* (orig.).

(c) eactar, outside of—eactrann, eactrannac, foreigner.

(d) fiað, in presence of—fiaðnaise—evidence.

(e) frít, fri, against—freasra (<frith-gaire), frít-bualadó, repercussion.

(f) iar, after—fiafruið, enquire.

(g) is, under, and os above—iseat, low, uasat, high, tios, tuas, etc. (os also forms compd. preps.).

- (h) *ro* (*L. pro*) with adjectives=too,—*ró-máit*.  
 (i) *co*, *com*=with,—*cúbreac*, bond, etc., *congnám*, help (<*gnóm*), etc.

Many *noun*-forms are used as preps. (with G.) :—

- (a) *cum*, to <*to+cém*> *toicim*, *dochum*, *cum*.  
 (b) *válta*, concerning—*válta an scéil*, “by the way.”  
 (c) *toisc*, because of (earlier *de toisc*)—*toisc a h-ingine*, because of her daughter.  
 (d) *tímeall*, around, about, *tímeall na h-áite*—around the place.  
 (e) *fan*, along, during—*fan an falla*, along the wall ; *fan na h-aimsire*, all the time (<*ar peadh na*).  
 (f) *cois*—beside—*cois na teime*, *na fairrge*—beside the fire, by the sea.  
 (g) *treasna*, across—*treasna na h-abann*—across the river.

B.—Compound Prepositions :—I.—Simple prep.+noun (with G.). II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep. (with D. A. or G. according to circumstances).

I.—Simple prep.+noun :—

- (a) *m-aice*, near—*m-aice na teime*, near the fire. So—*m-agaird*, against ; *i scionn*, after ; *i scáiteam*, during ; *i scúrsaí*, concerning ; *i n-ionad*, instead of, and many others.

((b) *ar agaird*, in front of—*ar agaird an dorais isteach*—opposite the door (viewed from the *outside*). So—*ar cùl*—behind ; *ar son*, for the sake of ; *ar peadh*—for the space of (*time*) ; *ar furo*, *ar fuaro*, throughout (*space*), and many others.

(c) *o'ionnsurðe*, towards, against—*o'ionnsurðe na Traoi*—against Troy ; *oo réir*, according to—*oá réir sin*—according to that.

(d) *de bárr*—as a result of—*de bárr san*—as a result of that ; *o'a bítinn sin*—because of that ; *o'a éis sin*—after that.

(e) *as uct*—for the sake of ; *as uct oo céannsacta*—for the sake of your mildness.

(f) *fe oem*, towards, for ; *fe bun*—under, less than.

(g) *te h-aġaró*, for, with a view to—*te h-a. an tSAMRAID*—in preparation for Summer ; *te h-aís*, *te cois*—beside; *te h-eaġla na heaġla*—“to make assurance doubly sure.”

(h) *ós cionn*, over—*ós a cionn*, over it, more ; *ós mo cōmair amac*—in front of me ; *ós comne a n-éadán*—before their faces.

(i) *tréis* (<*tar éis*), after—*tréis an tsaoġail*—after all ; *tar ceann do sláinte*—for your health's sake.

## II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep :—

(a) *i n-aice le*, near—*suiró annso i n-aice liom*—sit here near me ; *i gcomórtas le*, *i gcomórtas le*—compared with ; *i ngeall le*—in pledge for.

(b) *i břom cum*—in humour for (with G.) ; *i břeings cum*—angry with.

(c) *mar geall ar*—because of ; *mar bárr ar*—to cap.

(d) *i nġar oo*—near ; *i nġiorraċt oo*—near.

(e) *taistiar ve*, behind ; *lastoir ve*—East of.

(f) *i břao o*—far from.

## CHAPTER IX.

### INTERJECTIONS.

163.—The Interjection is the part of speech used to express some sudden emotion, or to give some direction :

(a) Amen, so be it ! *Aililiú*, Phew ! *Arde muise*, Well, well ! *Am basa, i mbáisté*—Indeed ! *Oar piad, dárfa tiat*, Egad ! (Minced forms of “ By God ! ”). *Asdóm*, Indeed ! (<is *tóic+init. n* of following word). *Muise*, Well ! (from *Muire*). *péac*, Lo ! Look here ! (even when addressing more than one). *Mo brón, mo téan, mo téan géar*, mo *creac γ mo cás, fóiríor*, Alas ! *Éist, Hush ! uc, ucón, ucón arde, mo truaġ*, Alas ! *mo truaġ crárote, a Muire is truaġ*, Alas and alack ! *Ar aġarò lib*, On ! *isteac teat*, In you go !

(b) Sometimes a noun with the article is used, out of construction, with the force of an interjection :—*Is armlarò a bì sé . . . . Sá ceapad so mairfead sé so veo, an t-amadán* ! (lúc. 45)—The fact was, he imagined he'd live for ever, the fool !

(c) Many *clauses* given in Grammars as Interjections can hardly be regarded as such. *E.g.—So vtéisrò tū slán a baile*—Safe home ; *Slán veo aġat*—Good-bye ; *Éist vo véal*—Silence ! *So mbeannuisrò Dia vuit*—God save you, Good morning, etc. *So mbuannuisrò Dia tu*—May God give you long life ; thank you !

## PART III.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

164.—(a) The art. always precedes its noun, and *usually* agrees with it in gender and number; *always* in case:—*an t-uball*—the apple (M. sg. N. or A. or absolute); *an bean*—the woman (F. sg. N.A. or abs.); *na h-ubla* (M. pl. N.A. or abs.); *na mná*—the women (F. pl. N.A. or abs.).

(b) The M. sg. *an t-* is used in N.A. before *aon*, *aonmád*, *oictmád*, even if the noun is F.—*An t-aon áit amáin sa roimh* (CMO. 72)—the one spot in the world; *An t-aon bean amáin*—the only woman; *an t-oictmád bliam*—the 8th year. In G. *an* (M.) and *na h-* (F.) are used:—*mardean an oictmád lae* (CMO. 302)—the morning of the 8th day; *mac na h-aonmád mná réas*—the 11th woman's son.

(c) The sg. art. is used with pl. noun, if the latter is felt as a unity:—*Táig aon lá is maíl líb de'n sé lá san* (CMO. 330)—Come any day of the six that you like; *an naoi scinn réas i ceitre fício* (CMO. 340)—The ninety-nine.

(d) When a noun, not followed by a demonstrative adj., governs a definite noun in the G., the whole expression is usually definite, but the art. is not used with the 1st noun:—*Oá mb' é teat mo rígealcta é* (B.N. 624)—Were it even the half of my Kingdom. *Bótar na mias*—the Road of the Dishes. But when this is *nominal*, not *real*, it is indefinite. *Oeir sé gur bótar na mias a tuatar air*—He says it is called “The Road of the

Dishes." But—*is é bótar na mias do gábadar an tásan*—It was "the Road of the Dishes" they took that day.

(e) If a demonstrative follows the 1st noun, the art. is used :—*An mac so mo deirbsear* (TBC. 129)—This sister's son of mine ; *ameasg na gcnoc san Samaria* (CMO. 296)—amid those hills of S.

(f) N.B.—*insean Táos*—T.'s daughter (implies that he has only one) ; *insean do T.*—a daughter of T. (he having at least one other).

(g) Even when the meaning is *real*, the 1st noun may be indefinite. Thus Canon O'Leary wrote—*Oá mba teat mo rígeacta é* (C.S.)—were it a half of my Kingdom (Cf. d. where it is definite). If the *particular half* were specified, we should say—*an teat so dem' rígeact.* So *táobh an bótair*, may refer to either side. But—*oo truro sé cum an táobh eile ve'n bótar* (CMO. 317)—He moved to the other side of the road.

(h) When both nouns are indefinite, the art. is not used :—*Céann capaill*—a horse's (not a cow's, or dog's) head ; *céann cait*—a cat's head ; *céann circe*—a hen's head ; *cloc reata*—a rolling stone.

(i) The 1st noun may be definite, the 2nd indefinite :—*An céann capaill sm*—that *horse's head* : But—*céann an capaill sm*—*that horse's head*. In the first ex. *capaill* has the force of an adj. *is cuma nō an cloc reata é*—He's as bad as a rolling stone.

(j) The exx. in (h) and (i) show the G. of possession or *quality*. It may also denote the *material*, or *contents* of what is denoted by the 1st noun ; or it may express a *whole* of which the governing noun denotes a *part*. (The Partitive G.). Thus :—<sup>1°</sup> Both nouns *indefinite* :—**Material** :—*árán mine coirce*—oatmeal bread. **Contents** :—*glome fiona*—a glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*braon uisce*—a drop of water. <sup>2°</sup> 1st n. *definite*, 2nd *indefinite* :—**Material** :—*an t-árán mine coirce seo*—this oatmeal bread. **Contents** :—*an glome fiona*—the glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*an braon uisce*—the drop of water.

(k) Both nouns *definite*, but *never in partitive meaning* :—**Material** :—*meatlós na mine*—the meal-bag. **Contents** :—

gloine an fionn—the wine-glass (though it be empty). **Partitive** :—Ordinarily partitive *oe* (with D.) is substituted for G.—*mo cion oe'n oisgeact* (C.M.O. 325)—my share of the inheritance ; *curo oe sna h-uaisleib*—some of the nobles : *curo na n-uasal*=the nobles' property (where the G. is possessive, not partitive).

(l) *Leat mo ríseacta* seems to be against this rule. But, when the 1st noun is made clearly definite, and *the particular half is specified*, the G. construction is dropped, and partitive *oe* (with D.) substituted :—*an leat tuarò oem' ríseact*—the northern half of my Kingdom. In 164 (d) *the half* is contrasted, not with *the other half*, but with *the whole*.

(m) *Tosac*, *deireadh*, *lár*, *bruac*, *cois*, and such words, may also be followed by a definite G., though the meaning seems to be partitive :—*Tosac an Éarráis*—the beginning of Spring. *Deireadh an tsamhrá*—the end of Summer. *Lár an fósgair*—the middle of Autumn. *Bruac na h-abann*—the river's edge. *Cois na fairrse*—the sea-side.

(n) The following exx. from U.I. violate the rule laid down in (d) above :—

1° *Iarraim-sa, mar atcumhé ort, car codail tusa aréir, a shúr,*

*In-Eirinn nō i dtalamh na bflaitheas mic Dé na noul* (C.C.U. 100)—

I ask, and beg you answer, where slept you, sister, yesternight,

In I., or in the land of the Kingdom of the Son of God of the elements.

2° *'Si an t-Samhail a' réalt eolais Criocha fórla mur dtíre* (C.C.U. 130)—

Sawell (a mountain) is the guiding-star of the territory of F., your land.

3° *'S dà gcreorofròe mo sgeal ba tiom périn an Connadair muig eo* (C.C.U. 83)—

And if my tale were credited, the Co. of M. were mine.

These exx. may be looked upon as archaic.

(o) *An tsaoighean caitce an taoibh slím* (H.A.I.C. 9)—The stately maiden of the slender body (This is *early modern*).

(p) When the def. G. is virtually an adj., the 1st noun may have the article :—*Cao é an uair a' cluig e?*  
—What time is it? *An Corónn Muire*—the Rosary.

(q) The art. is usually omitted :—1° In Type II. Ident. vb. is :—*Sé cùis ná h-éisteanne sibse te briathraibh* Óe—This is the reason why ye listen not to God's words. 2° In Type I. with predicates like the following :—*Sé ruo é is éasamhlaise . . . dár airigeas fós*—It's the strangest thing I've ever heard. 3° Also in Type VII.—*Sin é scéal 's fearr a támis cùsgann fós* (TBC. 122-3)—That's the best news we've had yet. 4° After proper names, before name of a trade, profession, occupation; and sometimes before a proper name when followed by a demonstrative :—*Aimoris Mac Crait, file*—The poet, A. McC. *Taois Gabha*—T. the smith. Is iongantach an bhean Méib seo—This M. is a wonderful woman.

165.—The def. article in I. where E. either has none at all, or else the indef. art :—

1° Before noun and demonstrative :—*An fear so, an bhean san, na neite úd* (But see last ex. above).

2° In interrog. sentences like—*Cao é an ruo é sin?*—What is that? But not with *cia'cu*, when *cia* is an adj.—*Cia'cu ceann ab' fearr teat*—Which one would you prefer? So the art. is absent in—*Cé méid, how much?* *Cá h-áit, where, whither, whence?* *Cá h-uair, when?* and wherever the interrog. forms a compound with the noun, e.g., *conus, canad*.

3° Before *uite*, every, when not preceded by *gac*—*an uile catair*—every city (*an catair uile*=the whole city).

4° In Type III, Classification sentences, where E. has the indef. art.—*Is deas an buachaill tu*—You're a nice boy!

5° Before titles (exc. in V. of course)—*an t-Álainn Peádar Ó Laocháire*—Fr. P. O'L.

6° In certain expressions of time :—*móe*, yesterday; *nuair*, when; *anois*, now; *i mbliadhna*, this year; *anuairidh*, last year; *an tráit*, *an tan*=when. In *mónu*, *i mbáireach*, *umanoirtear*—to-day, to-morrow, the day after to-morrow, E. has the art. as well.

7° In the names of the days of the week, when *nouns*, and not followed by a def. G.—*An luan*, Monday. But *Oíra luam*, on M.

8° In—*an t-EARRAIC*, *an SAMRÁD*, *an FÓGMAR*, *an GEIMREAO*—Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter. Except when used as adjectives (in G.)—*lá SAMRÁD*, *OÍDCE GEIMREAO*—a summer day, a winter night.

9° In—*An EANAIR*, *an FEAÐRA*, *an MÁRTA*, *an t-AIBREÁN*, *an BEALTAINE*, *an MEITÉAM*, *an t-LÚL*, *mí na SAMNA*, *mí na NOVLAIS*—Jan., Feb., March, Apr., May, June, July, Nov., Dec. But not when they are used adjectivally—*lá MÁRTA*, a March day (meaning is *indefinite*), *OÍDCE SAMNA*—Hallowe'en.

10° In distributive phrases like :—*Geobaird sibh pinginn an duine*—You shall receive each a penny ; *coróinn an ceann*—5s. apiece.

11° In nouns used as *abstracts*, or in a *general sense*:—*An fórlone*, patience ; *aímh an airgír*, a reputation for riches ; *an duine*, man (in general).

12° In names of virtues and vices, in a general sense:—*an dorúis*, unchastity ; *an t-ÓLACÁN*, intemperance (in drink).

13° With *concrete words*, used to denote a class :—*Bí an saróbir 's an doróbir i ngrád teis*—Rich and poor were in love with him.

14° With certain surnames, when the Christian name is absent :—*an BRIANAC*, Mr. O'Brien ; *an DREATNAC*, Mr. Walsh.

15° With names of certain countries, cities, rivers, etc.—*An Róimh*, Rome ; *an EILBEIS*, Switzerland ; *an ÁFRIC*, Africa ; *an FRAIMNC*, France ; *an Spáinn*, Spain ; *an tSORCA*, Sweden ; *an IORUARÓ*, Norway ; *EIRE*, Ireland ; G. usually *na h-EIREANN*, but also *EIREANN* :—*fir EIREANN*, the men of I. So, with *Alba* ; *an NEROIN*, Kenmare ; *na GLEANNTAÍ*, Glenties ; *an GUAGÁN*, Gougane Barra ; *an SAILLÍM*, Galway ; *an AONAC* (D), Nenagh ; *an FEOIR*, the river Nore, etc., etc.

16° With the names of things *unique* (sometimes) :—*an t-AIFREANN NAOMTA*, Holy Mass ; but *AIFREANN ÓE*, in accordance with 164 (d) ; *na FLAITÍS*, Heaven : but *FLAITÍS ÓE* ; *an CARAS*, *an CÁISC*, *an CINGCÍS*, *an INÍO*,

an Nollag—Lent, Easter, Pentecost, Shrovetide, Xmas.  
But often without art.—Lá Nollag, Xmas Day, Oíche  
Nollag, Xmas Eve ; Oíche Láe Nollag, Xmas Night,  
etc., etc.

17° Instead of a G. pers. pron., a D. pron. is sometimes used, and the article is used with the noun :—Conus tā  
an tsílante agat ? How is your health ? Do bris ar  
an bporóna agam—My patience became exhausted ; vo  
gearr sí an croíde acu (CMO. 299)—it lacerated their  
hearts.

18° In expressing large numbers or quantities :—na  
céadta, hundreds ; na táinte, crowds ; na milte,  
thousands ; na cianta, ages ; an iomao, an iomarca,  
too much, too many.

19° With names of languages (sometimes) :—an  
Ísæðilz, an Ídeartla, an Laiom, an Gréigis—I., E., L.,  
Gk.

166.—Vivid use of art.—To express certain emotions such as surprise, joy, pathos, fright, etc. :—1° Cao vo  
cífinn os mo cóimair amac ac an gallán !—There I saw in front of me—a pillar-stone ! (fear, excitement).  
2° Tá an lá agamn !—We are victors ! (joy). 3° Tá ro  
na táinte ag fásail báis ve'n ocras—Thousands are dying of hunger (pathos).

Here we may place the exclamatory or interjectional use of art. and noun ; and a certain use of the art. before ordinal numerals :—1° an t-amaoán ! γ α ceapao  
go noéanfainn a leitéro !—Fool that he was, to think I should do such a thing ! 2° Oeir an triomao duine  
gurb amharo a fuaras airgead ag dul amúda—A third fellow suggests that I found lost money !

## CHAPTER II.

### SYNTAX OF THE NOUN.

167.—The n. is that part of speech whereby any object or property existing in, or presented to, the mind is expressed by itself alone :—peár, bean, meisce, macán-taict—man, woman, intoxication, honesty.

Use of the cases :—The Nominative :—The cases are the forms which nouns assume to express their relations to other words in the sentence. The N. denotes :—

(a) The Subject :—Oo buail Seán e—S. struck him ; oo deimeadó brúscar oe—it was crumbled (Passive).

(b) The Predicate :—is sagart é sm—that is a priest; is i céad ceist oo cuireadó air, ná cér' òiob e—the first question put to him was who was he. (Here the pred. n. is *complex*—the clause—cér' òiob e).

(c) The Projected N.—Used at the beginning, when the speaker has not quite formed the sentence in his mind ; or when, for rhetorical or other reason, it is deliberately put first. *E.g.*, Dominus in caelo sedes ejus (Ps. x. 5)—The Lord's throne is in heaven. When thus projected, the N. form is often *absolute*.

(d) The Virtual N.

168.—The Projected N.—1° An té a tiochaird cùgamsa ni berd ocras air (CMO. 261)—He who comes to Me shall not hunger (an té, absolute). 2° An té a ò' iteann mise berd sé beo òem' bárr-sa (CMO. 262)—He that eateth Me shall live by Me (an té, N.). 3° An té ná berd ciatl aige, berd cuimne aige (Aes.)—He who will not have “ reason ” shall have “ reason to remember ” (an té, absolute). 4° An ruo nacl òfuit itte nō gorote, geobtar e—What is not eaten or stolen will be found (UP.—an ruo, N., if geobtar is taken as Pass.).

169.—The Virtual N.—1° Bi eagla air out téi (CMO. 253)—He was afraid to go with her. Out is here virtual

N., i.e., it is N. because of two other constructions, conveying the same meaning, in which *out* is actually N.:—(a) *B'eaſat leis out téi.* (b) *Cuir sé eaſta air out téi.* This is always the case where *effect* and *cause* are simply juxtaposed, without one saying in so many words, that the one *is* the cause of the other. 2° *Bi ionſna orta a ráð nár peaoðar e fáſan lastoir* (CMO. 259)—They were surprised to think they could not find Him East. (*ráð*, virtual N.). 3° *Bi leisge orm teactem' gnó beaſ fém ag cur isteac ort* (TBC. 134)—I was loth to come and disturb you with my own little worry. (*teact*, virtual N.).

### 170.—Apposition :—

A.—Grammatical :—1° *B'sm e atair Tomáis ui nualláin*—That was T. O'N.'s father. 2° *a Seáin ui Séagða*—S. O'Shea (V.). 3° Common in O.I. after proleptic *a* :—*a masse in chuirp—the beauty of the body.* 4° *fá clann oo Sarob m̄sm Cumm an triúr* (FF. Bk. I, 272)—The three were children of S. Conn's daughter. In these exx. *Tomáis ui*; *Seáin ui*; *a . . . . in chuirp*; *Sarob m̄sm*, are in grammatical apposition.

B.—Logical (only) :—1° *Bi a fios agam e* (Lúc. 41)—I knew it well. 2° *Tomáis pón Apstai* (E.S. 26)—The image of the Apostle Paul. 3° When a noun preceded by a title is used, the title only is inflected :—(a) *a atair peaoðar*—Fr. P. (Voc.). *peaoðar* is absolute. (b) *Leabair an Atar peaoðar Ó Laoighaire*—Fr. P. O'Leary's books. [*Atar*, G.; *peaoðar*, abs., and *Ó* (in gramm. appos.) abs. also]. (c) So, when the title follows the name, the title is not inflected :—*agus ainnm Bictória Úamrioſam Sasana raoi* (Smb. 130)—With V. the Q. of E's name under it. (*Úamrioſam* abs.).

C.—Apposition to a sentence :—1° *Bi átas air, níð nár ionſna*—Naturally, he was glad. Here “*níð nár ionſna*” is in appos. to “*bi átas air*,” and *níð* is best explained as virtual N. 2° *Ruo is measa ná san fém, is contabréac an aرا 1ا* (TBC. 19)—Worse still, they're a dangerous lot! *Ruo*, virtual N.

D.—Partitive Apposition :—A *part* is placed loosely in apposition to the *whole* :—1° *Oemro siað, an curu is*

mō acu, ar an scuma san e—They do it like that—the most of them. The apposition is corrective, toning down a too general statement. Curo, virtual N. 2° Oo daorad̄ an curo eile, sac re duine acu, cum báis—The others were condemned to death—every second man of them.

E.—Prepositional Apposition :—1° Cia'cu ve'n dā ceann is fearr teat?—Which of the two do you prefer? Acu is proleptic, ve'n dā ceann being its term, and this is prepositional apposition. Cia ve'n dā ceann would suffice logically, but cia'cu . . . is usual. 2° Cia'cu agamh-ne, cia'cu agamh-se, and even cia'cu acu san—Which of us, you, them?

**171.—Absolute Construction :**—The N. forms of nouns and pronouns are often *not* N. in *function*. This occurs when, logically, the meaning involved is that of G. D. A. or V., and usage allows none of them :—

1° In the “ Bracketed Construction ” (179) where the first noun (or pronoun) resists inflection, the phrase being taken as a unit; or, if the phrase is a noun-adj. one, the adj. at any rate resists inflection :—(a) Toisc (an sarbreas go leir a bheit aige) (G. 4)—Because he was so wealthy; an sarbreas, abs. the phrase G.

(b) Ar peadh (ramnt beas aimsire) (Bn. 710)—For some little time.—ramnt beas, abs.—the phrase (a complex n.) G. (c) i ceath (tarangs as) (S. 20)—with permission to withdraw the money.—tarangs, abs.—the phrase, G. (d) i gcaitheam (oiread i aon lá amain) (Im. 118)—For even a single day. oiread, abs.—phrase, G. (e) Dubairt sé ie (sac bean viob) (Dr. 21)—He told each of the women. (f) Tá tosac agat ortha go leir ac ar (Síle beas) (S. 18)—You're before them all, except little S. (g) tímair (an trimad̄ h-uair), (CS. 55)—About the third hour. (h) a (solas an tsolais siorurde) (Im. 271)—Thou light of everlasting light.

2° Cum (to) and tréis (after) do not inflect a vb. n. preceded by proleptic a :—(a) Tréis a rád̄ go dtiocfa (TBC. 188)—having said that you would come. (b) Tánaig annso cum a iarrad̄ ar Dia . . . (S. 42)—I came here to ask God. . . . (c) In the same circumstances a'd' iarrad̄

leaves the vb. n. uninflected :—*ná bí að' iarráid a cur  
'na luigé orm sun tu an sagart*—Don't try to convince me that you are the priest.

3° The term of proleptic *a*, *de*, *acu*, etc., is abs., except in the case of prep. appos., and the cases mentioned in 216 :—(a) *Tá a fiú ságam é*.—é abs. (b) *fás rúmsa a cuissint cao é an sagas Aristoteles* (Lúc. 36)—Leave it to me to judge what sort A. was. (c) *Ní pearrroe tu é*—You're nothing the better of it.—é abs. (d) *Cia'cu an catlaoir nō an min nō an t-uball ba deas?* (S. 6)—Was it the chair, or the meal, or the apple that was nice? *catlaoir*, *min*, *uball*, abs.

4° Wherever there is logical without grammatical apposition :—See 170, B.—There is a word used absolutely in every one of the exx. given there. Thus :—In 1° *e*; in 2° *Apstal*; in 3° *peadar*, etc.

5° The Projected N. forms given in 168 are often not N. syntactically, and must then be taken as abs.—This is the case in exx. 1° and 3°.

6° After “*is fiú*”=is worth :—*Oír is fiú an peár oibre é cotú* (CMÓ. 246)—For the labourer is worthy of his food.—é, abs.

7° *An té* is abs. in sentences like the following :—*Ba móR an t-uatbás é, an té a cípead é*—It was a very dreadful sight, had one seen it.

172.—Sense Construction :—1° *Cao é an bac atá orainn imteact láitreach?* (Lúc. 42)—What is there to prevent us from going away at once? *Cao é an bac atá orainn=nac ceannige thúinn*, or *ná fuit sé ceannige ságáinn*, either of which would be followed by the N. *imteact* (this being, therefore, in the orig. sentence virtual N.). Or one might render the sense by—*cao a coimeádófar sinn gán. . . ?*—In which case the orig. *imteact* would be virtual A. 2° Exx. like—*Beath easta orm tú isteac*, can be justified on the same principle of “Sense Construction.” 3° *Oob' uasal an tseisear iad* (TBC. 2)—They were a noble Six (Meadhbh is here referring to herself and her five sisters. *Seisear* (M.) is therefore treated as F.). 4° *a rogha bean=aon bean ba rogha leis*—any woman he chose.

## 173.—The Genitive :—

A.—The Possessive G. (with various shades of meaning)

1° Possession or ownership :—(a) *Tri ficead, cús deas*—23, 15 (lit. 20's 3 ; 10's 5). (b) *Leabhar Seáin*—S.'s book (He owns, or possesses it). 2° Made by :—*Antráin i Dánta an Chéitinnis*—Keating's Poems. 3° Representing :—*fomáis póní Apstal* (K.)—a statue of the A.P. 4° Commemorating :—*Sráid Uí Conaill*—O'Connell St. 5° Remarkable for :—*Coill na Lon*—The Wood of the Blackbirds (in Tyrone). 6° Partitive :—*Gearr-curo airgead*—a tidy sum of money.

N.B.—The partitive G. is *not* used :—(a) With pronouns. Partitive *as*, or *oe* (with D.) are used instead :—*an cura vioib*—those of them ; *cia'cu acu ?*—which of them ? Except in—a *búfumón*, a *teat*, a *trian*—the most of them, the half of it (them), the third of it—and similar phrases. (b) With Compar. and Superl.—*Se Táos is fearr oe'n beirt*—T. is the better of the two ; *an té is fearr orta go leir*—the best of them all. (c) With numerals :—*An dara duine oe'n oream*—The 2nd one of the lot ; *an ficead cura oe*—the 20th part of it. (d) With the Numeral Substantives, unless the G. is indefinite :—Thus we say :—*beirt fear*, *seisear ban*—two men, six women. (These are, perhaps, not partitive, but appositional or explanatory). But—*beirt oe sna fearraib*, *seisear oe sna mnáib*—Two of the men, six of the women. (e) Outside the classes of exx. in—a definite partitive G. is not permissible. Hence :—1° *sluaib oe daoimib bocta na catrac* (CM.O. 57)—Crowds of the city poor. 2° *A lán oe dántaib an file sin*—many of that poet's "dánta."

B.—The G. of Quality :—Denotes some quality or characteristic of what is denoted by the governing noun :—1° *ba mise croróe na féile acu, oróe i lá* (Song)—I was "the heart of hospitality" with them day and night. 2° *mná fuagála*—seamstresses. 3° *scian coise duibe* (S.)—a black-handled knife. 4° *oiróe seaca*—a frosty night.

C.—The Subjective (Active) G.—(a) The subjective G. is, properly speaking, that which denotes the agent of

the action implied by the governing word :—<sup>1°</sup> *grád* *Oé*—the love of God (which God has for us). <sup>2°</sup> *is beas é sum na nodaome sin sa nGáotúinn*—Those people take but little interest in I. (b) Although the G. in (a) is active, since it represents the agent, the name Active G. is sometimes given to the G. of the vb. n. itself used actively :—<sup>1°</sup> *Cearo déanta crocán gcriad* (K.)—An artificer of earthen pots. <sup>2°</sup> *Cailín deas crúróte na mbó*—the pretty milk-maid.

**D.—The Objective (Passive) G.**—Denotes the object of the action implied by the governing word, and is therefore also called **passive** :—<sup>1°</sup> *ár grád Oé*—For the love of God (i.e., which *we feel* for God). <sup>2°</sup> *An amharad ba mait leat vo tí-ceannað anoc̄t?*—Can you possibly wish to be beheaded to-night?

**E.—The Appositional G.**—Sometimes used instead of a n. in apposition. Cf. L. *urbs Roma*, I.—*Catair na Rómha*—the city of Rome.

**F.—The Explanatory G.**—Akin to E.—<sup>1°</sup> *Rinnceoir mná*—a female dancer. <sup>2°</sup> *Túbáilce na drúise*—the vice of impurity.

**G.—The G. of Time** :—<sup>1°</sup> *gáca bliadna, gáca míosa, gáca marone*—Every year, month, morning. Common in K. Orig. partitive, arising out of such phrases as, *lá gáca bliadna*. <sup>2°</sup> In *Oíla Domnaig*, etc., we have an old G. of time, from the noun *oíla*, *die*=day.

**H.—The G. of Purpose** :—An extension of the terminal meaning of the G. after *cum* :—<sup>1°</sup> *Cum bláth Cliat is ead vo cuadar*—It was to D. they went. <sup>2°</sup> *Cum na nodaome vo saorad is ead vo tánas*—I have come to save the people. Cf. the early use of E. *for*, and Fr. *pour* before infinitives :—I have come *for* to save the people. Je suis venu *pour* sauver le peuple.

**I. G. of Cause or Origin.**—*uaigneas vo mná* (P.SA 13)—loneliness (arising from loss) of your wife; *ub circe*—a hen-egg; *sicini cearc*—chickens; *buile feirge*—raging frenzy.

**J.—G. of Material.**—*cataoir súgáin*—a “soogawn” chair; *carn cloic*—a heap of stones; *bórd aðmara*—a wooden table; *rot iarrainn*—an iron wheel; *fonnsa práis*—a brazen fillet; *mála mine*—a bag of meal;

sac ptúir—a sack of flour. The last two exx. are G. of Material Contained—the contents.

The G. is not used after participles, or other adjectives, except when the latter are used as nouns :—*Bíodh truaig agat do bochtáibh Oé*—Have pity for God's poor.

**174.—The Dative** :—The D. does duty also for the Ablative, Instrumental and Locative cases :—D.—*Tábaír déinec tí*—Give her an alms. Abl.—*i bpao o báile*—far from home. Instr.—*te buille (oe) clárdeamh*—with a sword-thrust. Loc.—*sa báile*—at home : *sa Róimh*—in Rome.

The D. is used :—1° Without a prep.—*marom*—in the morning (also *ar marom*) ; *peasta*, henceforward (O.I. ind fecht sa=now) ; *móna*, to-day ; *anocht*, to-night (O.I. in-nocht=*the* night) ; *an páro*, whilst ; *nuaire*, *tráit*, when. These are all D. of time. *pé* (in *pé mar*) is a modal D.

2° With certain preps. (as set forth in 162). For the case of pronouns after preps., see 116.

The D. expresses :—(a) Possession :—*tá leabhar ag Seán*—S. has a book. (The G. may denote either possession or ownership). (b) Ownership (with *te*, and A. of pronouns).—*táim liom*, a hand of mine ; *is te Seán é*, it is Sean's ; *ni fheadair cos téi cár a déanfaró lámh téi* (S.)—Not “a foot of her” knows what “a hand of her” will do. (c) The subjective view, with *is* and *te* ; the objective fact with *is* and *vo* :—*is maít liom tae* *ac ní maít dom é*—I like tea but it isn't good for me ; *ní féiríomh liom*,—I dont think it possible ; *ni féiríomh dom*,—It is not possible for me. (d) Advantage and disadvantage :—*Oem rúo ar vo mátar*—obey your mother ; *is salac a déinis te Seán é*—you treated S. scurvily. (e) The indirect object—*Tábaír vo Liam é*—give it to William ; *ár n-árán laeteamail tábaír dúninn* *móna*—Give us this day our daily bread. (f) The agent (with *vo*)—*ár mbeidh ag triall i n-Éirinn vo Comhghuaillinn (P.P.)*—When C.C. was proceeding to I. (eclipsis after *Comh* is irregular) ; *ní gearanta vo líl*—L. needn't complain. (g) Local relation :—*i gCorcaig atá sé aonais*—He's in Cork now ; *bí sé ar an aonac moe*—he

was at the fair yesterday ; *is ó Corcaig dom*—I'm from Cork. (h) Various relations, after verbs, before and after nouns, and after adjectives and participles (see 305-6). (i) Mode, condition, instrument :—*le congnam Dé*, with God's help ; *ar meisce*, intoxicated ; *d'aon gnó*—on purpose ; *ar geatais* (Bn. 617), like a lunatic ; *ar luas* (Bn. 639), speedily. (j) Reason, purpose :—*ar an aðbar san*—for that reason ; *ar a usáct a bí sé*—considering how easy it was. (k) Measurement :—*oð fáro an lá is ead is giorra an oróce*—the longer the day the shorter the night.

“ *Do tómaiseas mo pic is mo pota 's mo cárta  
le pic is le pota 's le cárta mná an margaird—  
Ba mó iad mo pic is mo pota de cárta  
ná pic agus pota 's us cárta mná an margaird.* ”

(Riddle)

“ I measured my peck and my pot and my quart with those of the market-woman ; my peck and pot were larger by a quart, than the m-w.'s peck and pot and quart.”—(So the difference between the two sets of measures was two quarts). There is a variant :—

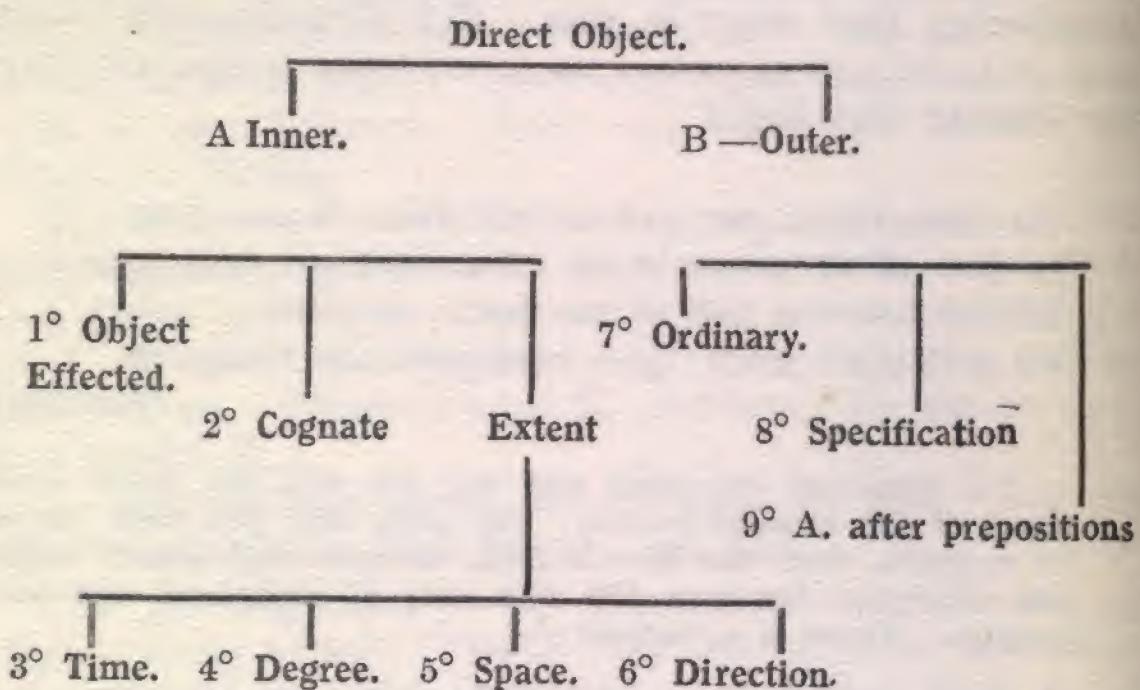
*Ba mó iad mo pic is mo pota de pic is de pota  
ná pic agus pota 's us cárta mná an margaird !*

(So the m-w.'s measures were just half the standard !)

- (l) Time :—*ó ceann ceann na bliana*—from one year's end to another ; *ón lá uro*—since the day. . . . (m) Origin :—*is de Mumintir Conaill me*—I'm an O'Connell. (n) Price :—*Diolfaró tu as an obair sin*—you'll pay for all that ; *cé méro a tugsais ar an mbuim ?* How much did you give for the cow ? *Do violas an oð buim ar caoigaird púnt*—I sold the two cows for £50. (o) Plenty, and emptiness :—*Ói an seomra lán de òaoimh beaga duibh*—the room was full of little black folk ; *tá an áit pollam ó òaoimh*—the place is a wilderness ; *a n-aighe ciún ó feirs agus ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Her mind at rest from anger and worry.

For other meanings of the D. see 304.

175.—**The Accusative** :—The A. is the case of the direct object, i.e., the object which defines directly the action of the verb. The object may be :—(a) virtually contained in the verb itself. This is called the Inner Object, the Object Effected. (b) Or distinct from the vb. This is called the Outer Object, the Object Affected. These distinctions give us the following scheme for the uses of the A.



C.—To denote the general object of thought, etc.  
**The Exclamatory A.**

### The A. after verbs, vb. nouns, and adjectives.

A. 1° **The Inner Object** :—*Do cruthu Í Dia an domhan*—God created the world.

(God *made a creature*—the world. 2° The Cognate A. is a special form of the A. of the Inner Object :—*oo buail sé buille orm*—he struck me a stroke. 3° The A. of Extent in Time :—*BiODAR AS feicteamh faro gac n-faro* (bn. 264)—They were waiting ever so long ; *scaoil leis an bliam seo*—let it be for this year ; *is doic liom go rai b si i ngráid leis go móR, tamall* (TBC. 5)—I think she was deeply in love with him for a while. 4° The A. of Extent in Degree :—*Tá an teat-scéal san ro-caoil iarracht* (TBC. 188)—That excuse is a little too subtle ;

Ói sé pas beag fuar—It was a little bit cold. N.B.—This A. is sometimes found in the Rel.—pé méro a bérð tú caillte leis (CMO. 318)—Whatever the amount that you are “down” through him ; do cuas amuða móran—I went a deal astray. 5° The A. of Extent in Space :—Oo tárla go ráib sagart as gábháil an treo (CMO. 317)—A priest happened to be going that way ; tánadár siubal aon lae ar agair (CMO. 71)—They advanced a day’s journey. 6° Terminal A.—do gluais an teatac an simne amac (S.)—The smoke went out the chimney ; an té ná tagann an doras isteac (CMO. 311)—He who cometh not in through the door ; ná h-iompuigír uarð veiseat ná tuatal (BN. 256)—Turn not away from it, right or left.

B.—The Outer Object :—7° Ordinary exx.—B’sm e a loit iao—That’s what destroyed them ; ná bris nos—do not violate a custom.

8° The A. of Specification :—An té is lag creideam—He who is weak as to faith ; An té is mó práirinn, is e is cinnite beit ar teireab (UP.)—The one in greatest hurry is sure to be last ; Ni feicimse aoinne annso is mó gád leis an mbia seo ná mé rém (CO. 29)—I see no one here in more need of this food than myself. 9° The A. after prepositions : See 162.

C.—The Exclamatory A.—Used interjectionally in such expressions as :—An t-amadán—the fool ! An pear bocht—the poor fellow ! Ac grád a tabairt vóib ! (CMO. 317)—But to think of loving them !

176 (a).—Muna mbeab, “only for” in such expressions as :—muna mbeab é, muna mbeab Seán—Only for him, S., may be said to take the A., if we are to look upon it as identical with O.I. ma-ni-bad, which took an A. owing to cen (=gán) with which it is almost identical in meaning.

(b) The Projected A.—1° do benn tolteanac ar scri cuige, ac oul cum cainnte leis, ni féarfaim—I should be willing to write to him, but as to giving him a personal interview—I couldn’t ! (Rhetorical for—ni féarfaim oul cum cainnte leis). 2° Déra dam a Dé, cé no béra acht tu ? (Quoted by Kuno Meyer, PIM. 13)—Who will give me tears but Thou, o God ?

(c) **The Virtual A.**—*ní féadfaró a díceall a déanamh ac an t-uán do mharbú* (CMO. 247)—All he can do, at his best, is to slay the lamb. *An t-uán*, virtual A. The sentence is an abbreviation of—*ní féadfaró a d. (pumh eile) a d.*, ac (*féadfaró sé*) *an t-uán do mharbú*; *cád a déanfaró mac an cait ac an tuč a mharbú?*—What should the kitten do but kill a mouse ! *an tuč*—virtual A. The sentence is a contamination (309) of ques. and ans.—*Cád a déanfaró mac an cait?* (*Ak nóm ní déanfaró sé a malairt*) ac (*déanfaró sé*) *an tuč a mharbú* !

**177.—The Vocative Case** :—That of direct address. As it expresses no relation to any other word, it presents no syntactical difficulties. The V. of *Oia*, God, is, in mod. I. *a Oia*, probably to avoid confusion with *a Sé* (Goose !).

**178.—The Verbal Noun** :—I. Its ordinary use, in N.G.D.A., or abs. II. In phrases where the agent and the object of the action are both expressed. III. In a passive sense. IV. In answers to questions, etc.

I (a) **N.**—*Is usa do camal gábháil tré cró snátaroe, ná do'n duine sarbhir dul isteac i ríseact na bplaiteas*—It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of heaven ; *nior gád ó do teact na dtreao i n-aon cor an lá san* (CMO. 334)—He needn't have come to meet them that day at all.

(b) **Projected N.**—*Ac dul a baile na ceannta súo, nior maist liom san*—But to go home with that fellow ! I shouldn't like it.

(c) **Virtual N.**—*Oo beadh náire orm dul isteac*—I'd be ashamed to go in ; *tá atas orm bualaod umat*—I'm pleased to meet you.

(d) **Absolute** :—*Is n-aigairí gád casadh i achrú d' dtéigeadh ar an gceol, téigeadh a comástrom d' achrú ar gluaiseact na nraoime* (S.)—For every change and turn that came upon the music, a corresponding change took place in the people's movements ; *ní deirim ná gur fearrroe tú beidh a d' aonar*—I'm inclined to think you're better alone.

(e) **Genitive** :—*Cailín deas crúidte na mbó*—The

pretty milk-maid ; Ceardó déanta crocán ḡcriadó (K.)—an artificer of earthen pots ; Seoðfar fear a ḡonta p̄os (TBC. 117)—We'll find a man to wound him yet.

(f) Dative :—Oo toðas-sa ó toðac iao, san iao oo déanam aon ruða cum an toða san oo tuilleam (CS)—I have chosen them from the beginning, without their having done anything to merit that choice ; Þi an ḡrian as taitneam orða, 7 biðvar as glacad na gréime (CMO. 333)—The sun was shining, and they were sunning themselves.

(g) Accusative :—1° Annsan go scaitþrois fanaðaint amuig, mar a mbeadó go 7 viossán fiacal (CMO. 331)—That then they should have to remain outside, where there would be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 2° A. after san :—Nior maít liom san oul a baile—I shouldn't like not to go home. 3° A. after roir, go, etc.—roir oscailt na nroirse, 7 nochtad na n-urcōrœac—Both the opening of the doors, and the exposure of the culprits ; go beit da créactaib cneasuigte (K.)—Until his wounds were healed ; tré oul inguais is eað tuiteann a lán—Many fall through courting dangers.

**II. Agent and Object in vb. n. phrase :**—Is iongna liom é oo toðad na n-arm san (TBC)—I'm surprised that he chooses those weapons ; Sometimes the agent is expressed by a rel. particle :—Ni tu ba maít liom o'fagail báis ar an ḡcumá san—It isn't you I should like to die thus ; when the obj. is a pron., the latter must precede the vb. n., so that agent and object come together, connected generally by as (S) :—O'ðomuig sé nárð' feroir a maít oo lot, toisc mé sá tabairt uaim ar son an tSlánuigteora (S. 62)—He admitted it was impossible to mar the good it did, since I gave it away for the Saviour's sake.

**III. The vb. n. in passive sense :**—Baileigdó an cogal ar d'cuis, 7 ceangalaigdó é na þunannaib te ooðgadó (CMO.)—Gather up first the cockle, and bind it into bundles to burn (=to be burned) ; na leog-se mo curu folu ooðrtadó (Bn. 407)—Do not allow my blood to be spilt.

The vb. n. is negated by san :—Dubaírt sé liom é

deanam—He told me to do it ; Dubairt sé liom san é deanam—He told me not to do it.

**IV. In answers to questions, etc.—**Cao cuige óibhbeit as magadh rúinn ? Ébeit tuille agam—Why are they making fun of us ? Because we've deserved it ! (=ébeit tuille agam pé noeár é, or some such thing); Hamlet do teact isteach—Enter H. (tagam h. isteach is rank Dearlaas) ; an duine a bí san lúic a gheas 'a teangeas as Criost (CS. 90, Title of Chap.)—C. heals the sick of the palsy.

**179.—Phrase Nouns:—I.—The Bracketed Construction (See 171).** Further exx.—cun (gabáil de cosáib i gcomáct an Áirseora) (CMO. 4)—to quell the power of the devil ; ran (bruac na mara san) (CMO. 81)—along that seashore ; tar eis (vioigaltas do baint amach) (Smb. 80)—after wreaking vengeance. N.B. gabáil, bruac, vioigaltas are absolute.

**II. The Unbracketed Construction :—**Phrase nouns may also be unbracketed, *i.e.*, the fundamental n. or pron. functions as N. G. D. or A. In the phrase “ceist a cur”—to put a question—ceist may be :

(a) **Subj. N. :**—1° to the vb. is—ba mait liom ceist a cur ort—I should like to put you a question. 2° **Appositional N.**—Tá sé cím mait agam ceist a cur air—we may as well put him a question. 3° **Projected N.**—ac ceist a cur air, nior mait liom san—but as for putting him a question, I shouldn't like it. 4° **Virtual N.**—beao eagla orm ceist a cur air—I should be afraid to put him a question.

(b) **Predicate N. to is :**—’Sé ruo a òem fosa ná ceist a cur cùca (CMO. 336)—Jesus simply put them a question.

(c) **Genitive.**—o'éis na ceiste cur cùca o'imitis sé uata—when he had put them the question, he left them.

(d) **Dative.**—Óa mbeao uam aige ar ceist a cur cùca—if he had had time to put them a question.

(e) **Accusative :**—1° After transitive vb.—o'orouig sé òom ceist a cur air—he bade me put him a question.

2° After san—san ceist a cur ar aomne—to question nobody. 3° After roin—roin ceist a cur 7 freagra do

glaearó—both putting a question, and receiving an answer. (f) **Virtual A.**—ni féadfaimn a déanam ac an ceist a cur cùca—I could only put them the question.

**III. Adverbial Noun-Phrases:**—(a) nil ri acu nár támis breis ⁊ tion a trioca céad (TBC. 37)—Every King of them has come with more than the complement of his barony. (b) Ói gáe aon ruo iompuigte láitreach, taoibh sios suas, ⁊ taoibh soir siar (Bn. 634)—Everything was forthwith turned completely topsy-turvy. See 175 A. 4°.

**IV.—Prepositional Noun-Phrases:**—These may be :—  
 (a) **Subj. N.** :—1° To the vb. is :—Niorb fiú duit gan fanaímant liom (S. 19)—It wasn't worth your while not to wait for me. 2° Appositional N.—Tá sé cón maist agat gan out a baile anocht—You may as well not go home to-night. 3° Projected N.—Gan out a baile, an ead?—Not go home, is it? 4° Virtual N.—Óeado náire orm gan é tabairt do—I'd be ashamed not to give it to him. 5° N. after go dtí :—go dtí tréis móran aimsire (AR. 103)—until after a long time. (b) **Pred. N. to is:**—'Se cómaire tuig sé dom ná gan out a baile a tuille—He advised me not to go home any more. (c) **Absolute:**—Nior misde duit gan é innsint dúinn—It wouldn't have been amiss if you hadn't told us. (d) **Genitive:**—1° Toisc gan iad abeit ann (CS. 5)—because they are not. 2° Cun gan é déanam (MSF. 137)—for not doing it. 3° Ar feadh i bpád—for a long time. 4° I n-eagmuis gan aon comne abeit acu (Bn)—in addition to their not expecting. . . . 5° Cun gan aon tsúim a cur sa caint (CMO. 53)—for not attending to the words. (e) **Dative:**—1° Anios ó m-aice an baile móir (S. 130)—up from somewhere near town. 2° Ó roim Ábraham abeit ann (CS. 251)—before A. was made. 3° Le gan an scoil do caiteamh cuige (MSF. 159)—for not relinquishing the school to him. 4° Ar roir sagart ⁊ Daoine (CMO. 15)—upon both priest and people. 5° Ó roim an Éirge amach (Smb. 147)—since before the Rising. (f) **Accusative:**—1° After trans. vb.—Dubaírt sé liom gan bac leis a tuille—he told me not to mind it any more. 2° After gan—Gan roir teabair is peictiúiri do dósadh—without

burning both books and pictures. 3° After *tre—tre*  
*gán aíre tabairt* *oo*—owing to inattention. 4° Virtual  
**A.**—*Ní duibhارت sé liom ac gán aon dá cura a déanam*  
*óem’ diceall*—he told me just to do my level best.

**180.—Noun Clauses** :—Like other nouns, these may be either N.G.D.A. or abs. :—A. Nom. noun-clauses :—  
 (a) Subj. N.—1° To *is* :—*Níor mait liom go noéanfá a leitéro*—I shouldn't like you to do such a thing.  
 2° Appos. N.—*Tá sé rárote ná déanfao éire cù de mada-ruao*—it has been said that “nothing will make a silk purse out of a sow's ear.” 3° Projected N.—*Go noéanfao si an feall san, is deacair é tuisint*—that she should have worked this treachery is hard to believe. 4° Virtual N.—*Ói náire uirri go raib si cóm dánasim* (Smb. 138)—she was ashamed of her boldness. 5° N. after *go uti* :—*Go uti go utiocfao Séadna*—till S. should come. (b) Pred. N.—*B’ é ba mait liomsa ná déanfi go veo é*—I should really wish it were never done. (c) Genitive :—1° *Cun go noéanfi é*—that it might be done. 2° *Toisc gur tugas céad púnt dom* (S.)—seeing that you gave me £100. (d) Dative :—*Ní raib deimne aige ar gurb e mac Dé e* (cm. 92)—he was not certain that He was the Son of God. (e) Accusative:—1° After trans. vb.—*Nuaír a tuig an fear bocht cé b’i aige ann* (Smb. 124)—when the poor fellow realised who it was. 2° After *gán*—*Ní beadh aon iongna orm gion go noéanfá é*—I shouldn't be surprised if you didn't do it.—*Gion go*=O.I. cen co, without that . . . lit.=although . . . not, but sometimes=although. The clause “*go noéanfá é*” is A. governed by *gán* (*gion*) ; while the clause “*gion go noéanfá é*” is virtual N. 3° Appositional A.—*Ná cuirimis san de masla ar ar nglóire, go utiúrimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross !

4° Absolute :—*Ní cuirfinn a catú go bráct riom go mbeinn póstta ag amadán*—I should never cease to regret being married to a fool. 5° Virtually absolute :—*Ní feadfar sé a rád ac ná tiocfaidh sé arís*—The only rejoinder left him is that he'll not come again.

181.—Aspiration of noun is often **dynamic**, i.e., employed to mark certain psychological distinctions :—(a) *táin molta* (CO)—a panegyric poem. (b) *ar bruac na fáirrge*—on the sea-shore (indefinite) : *ar bruac na f.* on a (particular) shore of the sea. (c) *tuine gán cos*—a person without legs : *tuine gán cos*, one deprived of a particular leg. (d) *aírm cogairó*—war-weapons (general) : *aírm cogairó*, weapons for a particular war. (e) *cúlait sagairt*, a priest's dress (particular).

182.—Remarks on the Cases :—(a) *Óios ann an lá san* (**not ar an lá san**)—I was there on that day. But—*Veró troscad ar an lá san*—that day will carry with it the obligation of fasting. (b) The D. pl. in -ib is often used dynamically :—*Cuirprió san rat ar Daoine*—that will make people prosperous : *Dionn an rat ar Daoimib airíte*—some people are lucky. (c) The N. pl. for the G.—*Oo tean sé as sgrí leitreacha éigín ar an dtalam* (CMO. 305)—He continued writing certain letters on the ground.

183.—Number :—(a) *Siubal láe*, a day's journey ; *siubal tri lá*, a three days' journey ; *1 scáiteam an cùis lá*, during (the period of) 5 days ; *an deic lá*, the (period of) ten days. But when the space of time is looked at in its component parts the pl. is used :—*ní raib aon uair a' cluas 1 scáiteam na noeic laeteanta san . . .* there wasn't an hour during those ten days. (b) The sg. noun is often used in speaking of a multitude where English uses the pl. 1° *Ná biod ór ná aírgearó ná sarbreas 1 dtaisse asaib 1 nbur gcrios* (CMO. 246)—Have neither gold nor silver nor any other kind of wealth in your girdles. 2° *Ní féadfaois a meabhrú n-a n-aigne* (TBC. 89)—they couldn't imagine. (c) But when the multitude act individually, the pl. is used :—. . . *oom' fearaid bocta a bì as imirt a n-anam* (G. pl.) *as troiro le nbur namair* (BN.)—to my poor men who were risking their lives fighting against your enemies. (d) The sg. is used generally after *is mó*=many a :—*is mó tuine bì 1 riocá spáram o'fagáil 1 ná fuair*—many a man was on the point of getting a purse, and didn't. But the pl.

occurs when there is question of a class :—*is mo daomha nac iad atá, riamh ó són, ag deanamh an uile saighas díchill ar an bpírinne sin do bogað* (CMO. 264)—many other people besides them are ever since making every effort to discount that statement. (e) The sg. *an té* may mean “ those who ”—*An té is lúgsa ciatl is é is mó cainnt*—They who have least sense talk most. (f) The sg. is often used with numerals :—1° *Tri níos gan riagair*—bean, muc & mule (UP.)—Three ungovernable things—a woman, a pig, a mule ! 2° *na tri ball is furus a gortu ñað—súil, glún & uille* (UP.)—The three members easily hurt—the eye, the knee and the elbow. 3° *Sealladh náoi mbó ficeadó dám le caillín dubh burde gan céill.* Að mo mairg sur þós me ariam i, is amdir na grárob 'mo verð (CCU. 104)—I was promised 29 cows, and a dark yellow girl with no sense, Alas ! that I ever married her, leaving behind me the maid of the flowing hair !

## CHAPTER III.

### SYNTAX OF THE ADJECTIVE.

184.—An adj. is **attributive** when it qualifies the n. without the intervention of any verbal form :—*o'fíill an mac breoite*—the sick lad returned ; *oo mairb Seán ós e*—young S. killed it. An adj. is **predicative** when attached to the n. only through the medium of a verb :—*tá an posaróeact san ana-breasg*—that pasturage is very fine. The vb., however, may be present only by implication :—1° *o'fíill an mac γ é breoite*—the lad returned sick. 2° *oo mairb Seán γ é ós e*—S. killed it when he was young. 3° *oo mairb Seán e γ é ós*—S. killed it young.

The **attributive adj.**—with the exceptions given below—follows its n. and agrees with it in gender, number and case, but not necessarily, of course, in declension :—*fear móir*, a great man ; *fír móra*, great men ; *bean maith*, a good woman : *mna maite*, good women ; *mac an fir móir seo*, this big man's son ; *ingeán na mna maite sin*, that good woman's daughter.

185 (a).—The **Cardinals** from 1 to 10 precede their nouns, whether other numbers are added or not :—*tri bliadóna*, *tri bliadóna ficeao* (*seascád*, *γrl.*), three, twenty-three (63) years. N.B.—*brós*, *dá bróis*, *tri bróga*—one, two, three shoes ; *aon brós*, any shoe ; *aon brós amáin*, one shoe.

(b) The **Ordinals**, also, except *tánaise*, *tánaiste* (2nd) precede the n.—*an tara h-aois réas*—the 12th century. But—*an aois tánaiste*—the 2nd age of life (from 7 to 16 years).

(c) The **pronom. adjs.**—*gac*, *gac aon*, *gac uile*, *an uile*, *gac 're* precede the n. Add to these the article, and the interrog. adjs., *cia*, *ca* :—*cionnus*, *conus*, how ; *canaid*, where ; *ca h-uair*, when, etc.

(d) Simple adjs. (but not those with the suffixes -ac, -mar, -amail, -da, -ta, -ta; nor participles) may precede the n. attributively, but then they form compounds, and often have a special shade of meaning:—mór-cúis, conceitedness: cúis mór, a grave reason; Nua-fiaðnáise, New Testament; fiaðnáise nua, fresh evidence.

(e) Deas—good, droc—bad, always precede the n. After the n. and also when predicative maít and oíl must be used:—an deas-bean, the good lady; droc-scéal, bad news; níor bris focal maít fíacal riám—a good word never did any harm; is maít bean deas-fir (TBC. 1)—a good man's wife is good.

(f) Sean, old, often precedes the n., but also follows, both attributively and predicatively, though, when pred., aosta is often preferred:—an sean-scéal i scóm-nurðe—the old, old story; tá sé aosta go maít—he's fairly old. The prefixed sean is sometimes contemptuous or humorous:—An sean-ðuacaiti—the devil. N.B.—an Tiomna Sean, an Tiomna Nua—the Old, the New Testament.

**186.**—The Ordinals are indeclinable. Before aonmað, oíctmað, the art. is an t- (N. and A.) whether the n. is M. or F., and na h- in G. sg. F.—1° an t-oíctmað aois déas, the 18th century: tár na h-oíctmað aoise déas, the middle of the 18th c. 2° i dtosac an oíctmað caibrión (CMO. 231), in the beginning of the 8th chapter. 3° céad, 1st, is uninflected, as it forms a compound with the noun:—peaca na céad mna (CMO. 21), the 1st woman's sin. 4° An tárna, the 2nd, keeps this form in G. sg. F.—i dtosac an tárna h-aoise—in the beginning of the 2nd century. But—i dtosac na tárna h-aoise.

**187 (a)** In mod. I. pred. adjs. are not inflected:—is maít iad na fir cum na mbán do cosc—Men are good for checking women.

(b) Compar. and superl. adjs. are always pred. N. to some form of is, and are not inflected for gender or number. Nios (níosa) niba sometimes occur even after some form of is:—Tiocfað an oisreacht cúsat niba

sábhála an bótar díreach, bhoibh go mbá níba risne é (Luc. 30)—the inheritance would have reached you more safely by the straight road, though it would have been slower.

(c) Certain adjs. do not admit comparison :—**féidir**, possible ; **cuma**, the same ; **céadona**, same ; **eile**, other ; **úile**, all ; numerals. In regard to **féidir**, one could say :—*is móroe is féidir tuit é, más féidir leat é*, it is all the more possible for you, if you think it so.

(d) "Less" and "least" are usually rendered by **túsha** with A. of Specification :—*ní peaca riám aon bhean ba túsha tuisgint ná i*—I never saw a less intelligent woman. In the first member of a Proportion sentence (212) "the less" is **ta** **tuisgead** :—*Oá tuisgead i an tuisgint is ead is mó an tuigteach cum caimte*—the less the intelligence, the greater the propensity to talk.

(e) **nios**, **niosa**, **niba**, are often strengthened by the addition of a numeral, generally **óá** or **seacht** :— $1^{\circ}$  *Oo bheadh oileán níba seacht measa ná é tagaite air* (TBC. 10)—A very much greater evil would have come upon him. **niosa** eclipses **p** :—*Tá sé i bhfeadh níosa bpearra mionu*—he's much better to-day.  $2^{\circ}$  *Tá sé níosa óá measa ná mar a bhi*—he's twice as bad as he was.  $3^{\circ}$  Sometimes the thought is fully expressed :—*Oo bheadh oileán ba seacht n-uaire níba measa tagaite air*.

**188 (a)** When several adjs. are used of the same n. or pron. **agus** is often absent, when the adjs. are of similar meaning, or when one of them is merely intensive :— $1^{\circ}$  *Cailín ciúin ciatlúmar* (S.)—a quiet, sensible girl.  $2^{\circ}$  *Lá breaig bog*—a beautifully soft day.  $3^{\circ}$  *Nac breaig bog a tagann caimte cùsait!*—how very easily you talk !

(b) When the adjs. or advs. express quite different ideas, or when there is a gradation, or a climax, **agus** is used :— $1^{\circ}$  *Bí an caimte go láróir, ⁊ go ciatlúmar ⁊ go bunadóasach*—the words were strong, and sensible and to the point.  $2^{\circ}$  *Tá sé go hoic, ⁊ go h-ana-oileán, ⁊ go mattuigte*—he's bad, very bad, even vicious.  $3^{\circ}$  *Sábháil go h-árd, ⁊ go ceoltúar ⁊ go binn* (CMO. 378)—chanting it aloud, musically, melodiously.  $4^{\circ}$  *Oo díultuigtear go tur ⁊ go fuaimear, ⁊ go seasúmac* (CMO.

384)—they refused, not only with dourness, but with hatred and obstinacy.

189.—Participial adjs. are used with *tá* in an elliptical construction :—1° *Tá nitte teat tamall maic gán vioit as* (TBC. 6)—you've run a good while without punishment. 2° *Tá itte γ ólta agamh*—we've eaten and drunk. 3° *Ófuit criocnuigte agat?*—have you finished ?

190.—The Dual adj. has the same form as the pl. Its initial is ordinarily aspirated :—*óá bróis deasa*—two nice shoes ; *óá súil gorma*—two blue eyes ; *óá sagart diaðasamla*—two pious priests. When *óá* is preceded by the G. pron. *a*, that pron. may aspirate or eclipse the init. *v-* according to circumstances ; in which case *óá* will asp. the following consonant :—*Bi na glomí na nóá vorn acu*—they had the glasses in their two fists. Or the *v-* of *óá* may be aspirated in all cases, and then the pron. produces its natural effect on the n.—*a óá vorn*—her two fists ; *a óá vorn*—his two fists ; *a óá noorn*—their two fists ; *γ a óá gcorrde óá sniom te buairt* (Mac. 263)—and their two hearts rent with anxiety. This seems to be the Conn. and W. Kerry usage :—*a óá béal buaithe ar a céite* (Smb. 17)—her two lips tightly closed. In “*n-a óá súil glais*” (Smb. 15)—in her two grey eyes—the adj. is irregular for *glasá* (due to the sg., *na súil glais*).

191 (a) **Trí, cétire, cúis, sé** may take a sg. or a pl. n.—*Trí capaill* or *tri capall*. The aspiration here may be due to O.I. *trí chét* (300), where *cét* is a true pl., and aspiration is regular.

(b) *Trí* and *cétire* were declined in O.I. and so eclipse in G. *Cúis* and *sé* eclipse analogically—*i scionn na vtrí mblian vreas*, at the end of the 13 years ; *ainnriote na sceitire gcos*, the four-footed animals ; *ar son na scúis scúisi*—for the 5 provinces, etc.

(c) Besides the ordinary method of counting, observe:  
 (a) *seacht scinn vreas ve buairb*—seventeen head of cows. This form is used when the numeral is compound, and the n. has an adj. attached :—*ceitire cinn picead ve*

capaillibh duibh—24 black horses. (b) tri deic a seacht  
de blianaibh (CMO. 9)—37 years. (c) seacht n-uaire pē  
seacht noeic (CMO. 292)—seventy times seven times.  
(d) céad oict noeic a cūis de millib fear (Mac. 7)—  
185,000 men. (e) sa bliain céad dā deic a sé—in the  
year 126.

**192.—Pronominal Adjectives:**—(a)—The possessives  
mo, etc., are G. (sg. and pl.) of the personal pronouns  
used (like G. nouns) as adjectives.

(b) **Interrogative Adjectives:**—

1° These (along with n.) are always pred. N. to is  
understood :—Conus (a) taoi?—How are you? = Cia ionnus  
(an ionnus) a taoi? Cf. Conn.—Cia caoi a bfuil tu?

2° Even when *the clause itself* is under government  
the interrog. adj. remains pred. N. to is :—Cuimhneadh  
sé ar conus mar a tuit fallai árda láróra na catraí san  
cun tailm anuas (CMO. 81)—He would think of how  
the strong high walls of that city tumbled to the ground.

3° So, when the clause is absolute :—Ni raibh fios  
acu cia'cu duine bi acu—they knew not with which one  
they were dealing.

**193.—Noun-clauses introduced by interrog. adjs. may  
be N.G.D.A. or absolute.**

1° **Nom.**—(a) To is :—ni heot dom conus a ðem sé  
e—I don't know how he did it; ni cuimhniom cia'cu  
ceann aðubairt sé ba measa—I forget which one he said  
was worst. (b) Pred. N. to is :—Si ceist a cuir sé  
cúca ná cia'cu duine ba ðoic leo ba cōmursa do'n duine  
bi i bpém—the question He put them was simply this,  
which one they thought was neighbour to the man in  
pain. (c) Appositional N.—Tá sé soilleir go maith  
cia'cu duine acu atá cionnta—it's plain enough which  
one of them is guilty.

2° **Absolute.**—Ni raibh fios aðam cia'cu leabar aðear-  
famn ba ðeise—I didn't know which book I should call  
the nicest.

3° **Virtual N.**—Bi iongna orm cia'cu duine acu go raibh  
an cion go léir aici air—I wondered as to which of them  
she was so fond of.

**4° Genitive.**—*Ní raibh aċ tuairim acu i ḡħadha cia' cu  
vume acu bi' acu—they could only guess to which of  
them they were speaking.*

**5° Dative:**—*Oo ċuimniġeaddrar . . . ar conus mar a  
biexxar pēm aġ obair* (CMO. 378)—they reflected on how  
they themselves had been working.

**6° Accus.**—*Oo tuisg an t-atair pearsar so haluun  
conus is ceart Gaoluinn a scri—Fr. P. knew perfectly  
how I. should be written.*

**194.**—Fem. adjs. in D. sg. sometimes resist inflection. At times this may be explained on the phrase-noun principle:—*istead i scelais beag* (CMO. 80)—into a little hole; *aġ an lānāmām oġ* (CMO. 110)—at (by) the young couple; *ar cloic mōr tron* (LMC. 42)—on (of) a big heavy stone; *i Sráid Uactarac Uí Conaill* (Smb 135)—in Up. O'C. St.; *disting a tānic cugam aréir,* a mearuġ ɿ a b'reorō mo ċroix, *ar oġi-mnaoui deas* maisead a tānic cugam te n-a pōiġ san orōc' (C.C.U. 100)—A vision came to me last night, that quickened and sickened my heart, of a fair lovely young woman who came to me with her kiss in the night; *trid an scatār beag* (CMO. 159)—through the little town; *cuir si istead ar an gcaimnt blaġdarac seo* (Smb. 164)—she interrupted this insinuating language. Sometimes the fem. adj. is inflected—*aoinne de'n lānāmām oġ* (Bn. 577)—any one of the young couple.

## CHAPTER IV.

### SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN.

195.—**The Personal Pronouns.**—These are fully declined, having N. G. D. and A. forms. The N. forms may be absolute :—

(a) In the Bracketed Construction :—1° *Áo' iarráidh é teagád anuas ar an dtalam* (CMO. 325)—trying to throw Him on the ground. 2° *Tréis i teacht isteach*—when she had come in. 3° *Oa' otoiliúinn cun tu gá marbád* (bn. 406)—were I to consent to your killing him. 4° *Le innis i bheit ag teacht* (bn. 545)—while she was coming.

(b) When they are the term of proleptic *a*, *de*, *acu*, etc.—1° *Dob' fearrroe aon cóimhle i bheit ann* (AR. 38)—any council would have benefited by her presence. 2° *Is móroe mo mian é cíos tusa bheit gá rád san liom* (PSA.)—I desire to hear it all the more since you tell me that. 3° *Cia' cu é crochád nó é leogaint saor is rogá lib?*—which is your choice, to have him hanged or acquitted ?

(c) After *is fiú*=is worth, is worthy of, and speaking generally, wherever there is logical, without grammatical, apposition—*Ni fiú i e*—it is not worth it.

196.—The personal pronouns :—

(a) In virtual Nom.—1° *Bí atas móir air iad do teacht* (AR. 8)—he was delighted that they came. 2° *Tá catú orm i tabhairt riám do* (bn. 803)—I'm sorry I ever gave her to him. 3° *Bí catú ar na Gaeil iad do dul as com saor* (AR. 89)—the Irish were sorry that they (the enemy) got off so lightly.

(b) As A. of Extent in Space.—*Ar síuoblais é go léir?*—did you walk the whole way ?

197.—The G. forms are usually either :—

- (a) Possessive :—mo teabhar-sa—my book, or—
- (b) Subjective :—is móroe mo mian é cíos—my desire to hear it is all the greater.
- (c) Objective :—tátar cum bair marbta—they're going to kill you.
- (d) Partitive (but only within certain limits) :—  
a teast—half of it (them) ; a bprúmór—the most of them. Generally partitive *óe* or *as* (with D. of course) :—  
an eudo is mó acu ; a lán agaimn—many of us ; eudo agairb—some of you.

When the n. is V. the G. of the personal pronoun is usually not expressed in mod. I.—a Tísearna Óia—my Lord God ; a Óia na glóire—O ! my God Almighty ; a Cáit a laoigh—my dear Cáit. In—ár n-aicair atá ar neamh—ár is retained on account of its theological importance.

198 (a) The D. forms are found (suffixed) with those preps. that governed the D. alone ; never after *ar*, sometimes after *in*.

(b) These prons. as well as nouns, may be in the virtual A. (176, c).

(c) Besides the ordinary emphatic particles, *rém* is sometimes attached :—1° Cuair sé *rém* γ iad san *ar* bórd na lumge (CMO. 254)—Both He and they embarked. 2° Óiordar ar aon *ann*, é *rém* γ i *rém*—They were both there, he and she (man and wife).

(d) For the conjunctive and disjunctive uses of 3 sg. and 3 pl. forms, see 110.

### Prolepsis (199—216).

199 (a) The first use of the personal pronouns was analeptic, *i.e.*, retrospective, referring to some person, place, thing, group or name already mentioned. Prolepsis means the anticipatory use, referring to a noun, pronoun, phrase or clause to follow, and pronouns so used are called proleptic.

(b) The general rule governing prolepsis may be stated thus :—1° When the proleptic pronoun is N. or A. governed by a transitive vb., the "term" is likewise

N. or A. 2° When the proleptic pron. is G. D. A. governed by a prep., or absolute, then the term is absolute.

(c) The following pronouns are used proleptically in mod. I.—A.—é, i, iao, eao. B.—sé. C.—san.

D.—so, seo. E.—é sm. F.—sroé (sroi, sroiaeo). G.—The 3 sg. G. pron. a. H.—The 3 pl. G. pron. a. I.—The suffixed prons. (D. or A.) after many preps., notably, ve, acu, air, uime, leis, cuige, amlaio.

### 200.—Proleptic é, i, iao, eao :—

1° All four are used in Identification Sentences to anticipate the predicate in Types I, II, III, VIII, IX, and X. (See Syntax of the Copula).

2° é, i and iao are also used proleptically to anticipate :—(a) the subject in interrog. sentences :—Cao é an áit as ar cùsaíos cùsaíann an maoira so? (Lúc. 42)—Where did you bring this dog from? (b) Sometimes outside interrog. sentences :—Is lionmar iao a mburóine (TBC. 148)—numerous are their battalions. But the next sentence has, without any proleptic pron.—is gléimeac taitneamh a n-éroi ⁊ a n-árm—their armour and weapons gleam brightly.

3° In other than is sentences é is used proleptically :—  
 (a) In the Nom.—Ni berò orm é tábairt le rád óróib gur déimeas é—I shan't have to give them to say that I did it. (b) In the A.—Oem é fósairt go scuirfar an cime cum báis—have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death. (c) Virtual N.—Tá átas orta é beit te rád acu go bpreacadar an ri—they are glad to have it to say that they saw the king. (d) Absolute :—Tá a fios acu é beit socair go nodaorfar é—they know it is settled that he will be condemned. (e) Appositional N.—Tá sé as goilleamaint orm é beit socair, go . . . I'm worried that they have arranged that . . .

N.B.—In all these exx. the "term" is to be parsed according to rule given in 199 (b).

201.—Proleptic sé :—(a) Tá sé uaigheac a beit folam (UP.)—its a lonesome thing to be empty. (b) An té a mberò sé na cimneamain é crocad, ca báidtear go brat é (UP.)—He who is destined to be hanged will

never be drowned ! (c) *Nil sé ceart agat an sgéal do glacadh cóm bog* (AR. 40)—you should not take things so easily. (d)—*Ói sé an-áiseamail aige áit d'a sord beit aige le leitreacha a sgríobhadh ann* (Smb. 129)—he found it very convenient to have such a place to write letters in.

**202.**—Proleptic *san* :—*Ná cuirimis san te masta ar an nglóire go uteicimis ón scrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. *San* denotes “the distant object.” For the Christian “to shirk the cross” is an odious thing, and should be put far from him. *San* is here utterly contemptuous.

**203.**—Proleptic *so*, *seo* :—<sup>1°</sup> *Cao a tuis so tómsa mátar mo Tísearna do teacht ag triall orm?* (CS. 140)—Whence is this to me that the Mother of my Lord should come to me ? *So* denotes that which is near the speaker. Pleasant things are brought near in thought and imagination. <sup>2°</sup> *Ac cuiread so buairt ort, gan tu beit cóm maist ná cóm n-airead ort réin i ba ceart do duine démoroed a beit i seirbhís Oé* (Im. 224)—But be troubled about this, that thou art not as good or as watchful over thyself as a devout person should be in God’s service.

Good advice is brought “near the mind’s eye.” Note that *so* is much stronger than either *sé*, or *é*.

**204.**—Proleptic *é sin* :—<sup>1°</sup> *Agus mā's píor é, a phír thíos, cao é sin o' aoinne eile sin?* (TBC. 16)—And if it’s true, Mr. Steward, what’s that to anyone else ? <sup>2°</sup> *Cao é sin túitse i tómsa san?* (CMO. 110)—What is that to thee or to Me ? In these exx. *é sin* is primarily analeptic, but *sin*, *san*, are added at the end to satisfy the proleptic tendency of *é sin*. When *é sin* is analeptic it refers ordinarily to a M. (or orig. neut.) noun. But when proleptic, it may refer to either gender, either number, and any of the three persons :—<sup>3°</sup> *Cao é sin dúnne túsa?* (CS. 21)—What art Thou to us ? *Cao é sin dúnne síbse?*—What are ye to us ? *Cao é sin Daoibhse i siúo?*—What is such a woman to you ? <sup>4°</sup>

This proleptic *é sin* (preceded by *cád*) often anticipates another *cád* (*cí a*) question :—(a) *Cád é sin tó san cád a déanfaró an ÁRÓ-RÍGEACT?* (N. 296)—What is it to him how it fares with the High-Kingship? (b) *Cád é sin túimne cí a' cu 'tácar socair air nō ná fuitear* (N. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? N.B.—Pred. of 1st *is*.—*Cád . . . túimne.* Subj.—*é sin* (proleptic) : Real subj.—*cí a' cu . . . fuitear.* Pred. of 2nd *is* (understood with *cí a*)—*cí a' cu . . . fuitear.* Subj.—*é, understood.*

**205.**—Proleptic *sídé* (*sídí, sídiad*) :— :—*Sroé is mó a coisceann sólás ó Déar ar teacth cuigat, a deacraict leat iompair cun úrnuigte* (Im. 150)—This is what mostly prevents heavenly consolation from reaching you, the difficulty you experience in turning to prayer. Note that *sroé* is stronger than *is é*.

**206.**—The proleptic G. sg. *a* :—There are three uses:—

I.—Before a vb. n. to anticipate the object of the action (when this is a phrase or clause which cannot be inflected); also before nouns like *burdeacas* which imply action.

II.—Before a n. denoting quality, quantity, time, intensity, meaning, and similar notions, to anticipate—  
(a) the action itself (verb); (b) a noun which is not a noun of action at all; (c) a pronoun.

III.—Before a noun denoting state, condition, etc., to anticipate a *tá* clause.

**207.**—Before a verbal noun :—1° *Bíod a fios an méro seo agairib go bpríil rígeact Dé i n-acamaireact* (CmD. 314)—Know ye this, that the Kingdom of God is at hand. 2° *Tig liom a rád leat go bpríilfro mé féin* (Smb. 112)—I can tell you I shall return myself. 3° In Conn. I. proleptic *a* is sometimes absent :—*Ag iarráid ar an easboc smaict a cur ar an sagart* (Smb. 125)—requesting the bishop to keep the curate in order. Strict I. idiom requires *gá iarráid*.

**208.**—Before equivalently vb. nouns :—1° *a Dé,*

beirim a burdeacas leat ná fuilim-se mar an eudo eile  
de sna Daoine (CMO. 359)—O God, I thank Thee that  
I am not like the rest of men. 2° Cao é a bríg feall  
Concuabair seacás an feall so? (TBC. 42)—What signi-  
fies C's. treachery compared with this?

209.—Before a non-vb. noun :—1° Agus a liactaigé  
bean áluinn bì sa tir! (Smb. 153)—And there were so  
many fair women in the land! 2° Ói iongna a gcoróid  
orta a feabas a deimeadar an gno (S. 183)—They were  
amazed that they did the thing so well. 3° In U. and  
Conn. I. instead of proleptic *a*, we often find the fol-  
lowing :—Cumannis sí a nois ar cóm minic is dubairt sí  
te na mac (Smb. 34)—She thought now of how often she  
had told her son (=Munster I.—ar a minicige adubairt;  
or—air, cao é a minicige).

210.—Anticipating a “*tá*” clause :—1° iongna orta  
a fáid atáim uata (TBC. 252)—surprised that I am so  
long away from them. 2° Cao é an beann a bhead aige  
siúd ar uisce te, γ a teo atá an áit as a dtáimis sé? (S. 113)—What should he care about hot water, con-  
sidering the heat of the place whence he came?

211.—Óa=however, notwithstanding, etc.—This is  
simply proleptic *a* preceded by the prep. *do* or *de*.  
At first *a* was analeptic. E.g.—i scat óa truime, i  
n-eisim óa géire, i spéirlinn óa déime (N.)—In battle  
for (all) its heaviness, in stress for (all) its sharpness,  
in combat for (all) its sternness. Here, *cat*, *eisim*,  
*spéirlinn* are D. When *a* is proleptic these nouns become  
absolute :—óa truime *cat*, óa géire *eisim*, óa déime  
*spéirlinn*. Take the Eng. sentence :—For all his clever-  
ness, he has made a mistake. The I. for this is like the  
E. with one important difference :—óa gastaict e, tá  
dearmad déanta aige. The E. “he” is rendered in  
*aige*, and the I. *e* is not in the E. at all. There is another  
difference. When the E. possessive “he” changes for  
gender, number and person, “his” must change also.  
Thus—For all *her* cleverness, she has made a mistake.  
If I. followed the same scheme we should have—óa

gastact (i) tā dearmad déanta aicí. So—o'ar n̄gastact (sinn) tā dearmad déanta agaínn—for all our cleverness, etc. But this is not done. The 3 sg. form tā ḡastact is *generalized* for both genders and numbers and all three persons. Once the principle of Generalization is understood the whole matter becomes quite simple. Examples :—1° Oā feabhas n̄i bionn droc-dhume éigim ar a tí (fSA.)—No matter how good a king may be, there is always some evil person to attack him. 2° Oā tuigeas tu, n̄i leanb tu—You may be small, but you're no child ! 3° Cuimpteac uilc is ead é, tā steamaine a ḡiall ḡ tā óige a feascaint (TBC. 107)—He's a vicious wretch, though his jaw is so smooth and his look so young.

212.—Proportion :—Proportion sentences like “the more the merrier” are expressed in mod. I. by the formula :—tā . . . . is ead is . . . . This is a further use of proleptic a found in tā :—1° Oā tuatact a beimh tian sa baile is ead is pearra é (TBC. 118)—The sooner we are back at home, the better. 2° Oo tuig si . . . . tā méid ḡ tā firinniúe é an moladh gurb ead is mó an comtaobairt (CMO. 32)—She knew that the greater and the juster the praise, the greater is the danger (to humility). 3° Oā tuatact a berois imtigte as an gcatair, gurb ead b'pearra dōib fém é (Bn. 718)—that the sooner they left the city the better it would be for themselves. In order to understand the genesis of this formula, let us consider three stages :—

(a) The Mathematical stage :—Oā faro a roghaird sib ar aghaird is ead is giorra bero sib do'n baile—The farther you advance the nearer you'll be to home. Here we are measuring spacial distance by spacial distance, and the measurement is mathematically accurate. The sentence is of the Type—PVpS. It is the emphatic form of—Is tā faro a roghaird sib ar aghaird is giorra bero sib do'n baile. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—Is é a faro a roghaird sib ar aghaird an méid stíge n-árb giorra bero sib do'n baile òe. The subj. is absolutely clear—an méid stíge . . . òe, i.e., the distance by which you'll be nearer home ; the pred. is equally clear—

á fáro a . . . a gárd—the distance you shall advance, and the statement is mathematically accurate.

(b) The Intermediate stage :—Óa fáro an tA is eadó is GIORRA an oróce—the longer the day, the shorter the night. Here a certain “looseness” has crept in. When we analyse it we shall find an inexactitude which was not in the previous sentence. The unemphatic form is—Is óa fáro an tA is GIORRA an oróce. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—Is é a fáro an tA an fáro n-aib GIORRA an oróce òe. The subj. is clear now—an fáro . . . òe—the length by which the night is shorter ; and the pred. is—a fáro an tA—the length of the day (*lit.*—the length of it—the day). But this is not true, taken literally. The length by which the night is shorter is *not* the length of the day, but rather the increase in length. The formula which was “above suspicion” in (a) is now used with a little latitude—that is all.

(c) The Final stage :—The formula is now used for all kinds of proportion :—Óa fáro a teogfar i n-aisce téi é, is eadó is dána leanfáro sí òe (S. 119)—The longer she’s let off with it, the more brazenly she’ll stick to it.—Emphatic form of—Is óa fáro . . . é, is dána . . . òe. And this is the complex elliptical form of—Is é a fáro . . . é, an méro . . . leanfáro sí òe òe—the extent to which she’ll stick to it more brazenly is the length of time she’s let off ! That “time” should be a fit measure of “increase in boldness” is only accidental. The real causes of the increase in boldness were in operation as time went on, and so the passage of time is used loosely as the measure of the increase.

The following exx. from U.I. recall some of the formulae used in early mod. I.—1° Níl óa méadó a’ ceactaire nac móroe na gnótiúigte (*sic*) (UP.)—The greater the envoy, the more important the business. 2° Óa móroe méadóas tu ar a’ gránra gan binn, óa móroe istigeas tu (UP.)—The more you elevate an ugly person of no merit, the more you lower him. With móroe, here, cf.—’Sa scú glaca re namaro óa móire (AOR. 66)—And their hound in battle against the greatest foe. For

K's six ways of expressing Proportion, see "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. IV, pp. 38-41.

**213.**—The 3 pl. G. pronoun **a** :—  
 1° *An ḡtioċfáid a ṭfurmór so slán ó'n scosagó* (TBC. 29)—Whether the most of these will come safely out of the war.  
 2° *Ói aġam a gcommeas san ve macaib uasal* (TBC. 2)—I had as many more sons of Nobles (Here, so and *san* are absolute).

**214.**—The Suffixed Pronouns :—  
**I. De** :—(a) Apart from Comparatives :—*Ói deimnígħċeac ve, so n-oscaldar a súle l-aitreac* (Bn. 585)—Be assured that his eyes will be opened promptly. (b) With Comparatives :—  
 1° *Ni fearoar an pearroet iad ar tugas vóib* (S. 56)—I wonder are they anything the better of all I gave them.  
 2° *Ba móroe mo šonas ar an saoġat é* (SmB. 30)—My earthly happiness would have been all the greater (*é*, abs.). 3° *Is teoroe vo'n mbrat a ḡublað* (UP.)—The blanket is the warmer for being doubled! (Said when relations marry). The subj. here is *é* (understood). Another form—*is teoroe an brat a ḡublað*—has *an brat* as subj. In both, *a ḡublað* is the "term" of proleptic *ve*, and is absolute. (c) *Ve* is sometimes analeptic :—*Gura' móroe muinntir na cille* (UP.)—May the church-yard folk increase by him! (I.e., may he soon join them!). (d) And sometimes both analeptic and proleptic :—  
 1° *Ma noċċann fear a kün vā minnai, is għor-raide a saoġat é*—If a man reveal his secret to his wife, his life is thereby shortened.  
 2° *Vā mbeaxo vo beo cōm oħreac lew' marb, ba siaroe vo saoġat é* (Aes.)—Had you been as straight in life as you are in death, your life would have been all the longer.  
 3° *Ma bainim lu roġġi għal-karr aistri, is pearroet i ē*—If we make her laugh a little she's all the better for it.

**II.—Acu** :—  
 1° *Cao ē smiex vüinnej cia'cu 'takbar socair aik nō ná fuqtear?* (N. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? In this type of sentence a direct rel. is used with the affirmative verb, and the neg. rel. with the second verb. This is due to sentences where the rel. had a true modal meaning. E.g., *ni*

feadar cia'cu ðeimeann sé e nō ná ðeimeann—(I don't know whether he does it or not) is due to—Cia'cu mar seo nō mar siúd a ðeimeann sé e—where the subj. is—An cuma n-a nðeimeann sé e (the way in which he does it). In sentence 1° above, neither 'tátar nor fuitear involves any real relative meaning. 2° Pé 'cu tioctar san mar sin nū ná tioctar (AR. 12)—whether that should happen or not. 3° Pé 'cu biontar cionntac nū ná rabadair (AR. 17)—whether they were guilty or not.

III.—AIR, LEIS, UIME, CUIGE, etc.—1° As brat air, so ngeobad sé a páirt (Mac. 54)—in the hope that he would take his part. 2° Nior feadas aon tuairim a tðabairt do, cérb é an biteamhnac—I couldn't guess who the villain was. 3° Is uime ceana rug Dia an daor-breac so ar na daomh, tré caill a céad do'n céad atair ó'r fásadair (KTB.)—God passed this judgment of condemnation on mankind, because their first parents broke His Commandment. N.B.—In the I. sentence, there is prep. apposition.

IV.—AMBLADÓ:—When the subject of is is omitted with proleptic ambladó a pleonastic direct rel. precedes the following vb. If neg. the particle is ná, nac, nár. This rel. does not appear when the subj. of is is expressed. The insertion of the rel. is due either :—(a) to modal clauses after *analeptic* ambladó.—Is mait liom é sá ðeánam mar sin, ⁊ is ambladó a ðeimeann sé e de gnád—I like him to do it like that, and that's how he usually does it. (b) Or in compensation for the modal rel. always contained in the suppressed subj. Various meanings are expressed by proleptic ambladó :—

1° Descriptive :—Is ambladó a bì crumhigte 'san ait sin rómpa stuag daomhe (CMO. 254)—They found there gathered together a crowd.

2° Removal of wrong impression :—Nior ñem sé aon ñosadó ar an scainnt. Is ambladó a cuir sé i ñperöm i niba ñaingne (CMO. 260)—He did not tone down the words. On the contrary, he insisted on their literal meaning more strictly.

3° The reason :—An ambladó a bis ana-saróbbir (Lúc. 46)—Is it because you were very wealthy?

4° Surprise :—*An amhrád náe eol duit cao iad na catanna a tágann uaró ?* (Lúc. 56)—Don't you really know what temptations it causes ?

5° Hurt feelings :—*An amhrád ba ceart do rí teacht annso tomraicta ?* (Lúc. 23)—Would you have Royalty come here naked ? (Surely not !)

6° Satire :—*An amhrád ba ceart dom gan báis o'fagán nuair ná raibh an t-airgead agam ?* (Lúc. 41)—I suppose I did wrong to die, not having the dues ! (Charon's fee).

7° Indignation :—*An amhrád a beir-se ar an aomne amáin a maoiropó go dtámis sé anall i n-aistíse ?* (Lúc. 41)—Am I to suppose that you are the only one to boast that he got across (the Styx) free ?

8° Contempt :—*An amhrád a measfád síb beirt ag cainnt go dtí go scrúdhpárdó an sioc na carban agairb !* (TBC. 61)—I suppose you mean to keep on talking till the frost hardens your gums !

9° The Result :—*Is amhrád a bím piastai óiob istíse na corp* (CO. 5)—The result was, they turned into worms in his body.

10° The Unexpected :—*Is amhrád a bí se réin sá Óaorád réim nómam* (Lúc. 45)—He actually condemned himself in advance of me. (Unlike the others, who blamed someone else for their own follies).

11° Explanatory :—*Is amhrád a bí deamhan éigim i seilbh mntí* (CMO. 330)—The reason (of her infirmity) was, she was possessed by a devil.

In Conn. I. “ *is é an cãoi* ” often takes the place of “ *is amhrád* ” :—(a) ’Sé an cãoi sur reabád ruadhais cosaint an bheolin orm (SmB. 24)—The fact is, the first string of my violin has broken.

(b) *Act is é an cãoi go dtámis seirbhé na glór siúr* (*Ibid.* 31)—But rather a bitterness crept into the woman's voice.

(c) ’Sé an cãoi sur taictuis sé a bean (*Ibid.* 159)—the fact is, he choked his wife.

(d) *Nó, an é an cãoi sur bog aoisneas na h-áite γ na h-aimsire a croíre ?* (*Ibid.* 17)—Or, rather did the delightfulness of the place and of the weather affect her heart ? In these exx. the following clause is preceded by a conj. So, when “ *is amhrád* ” is used :—1° *An*

aṁlārō go rai'b an sean-berólin a᷑ seinnit uarō pēm san dorcasas? (Smb. 7)—Could it be that the old fiddle was playing of itself in the dark? 2° b'fēroir go mb' aṁlārō sur cuir gne brónac na mná b'i sios (*sic*) paoi cosg leis (*Ibid.* 17)—Perhaps the fact was that the doleful look of the woman below checked it (the bird's song).

1s aṁlārō, with subj. expressed :—1° 1s aṁlārō mar atá sé, ní fēroir teact suas téi (lúc. 13)—As a matter of fact you can't reach her. 2° 1s aṁlārō mar atá an sgéal, ní mór dūnn árdán eisim o'fagán (lúc. 48)—This is how things stand—we must procure some elevation. 3° 1s aṁlārō mar atá an sgéal, ní dileastac sa tir seo an sósar do pōsao ar béalair an tsinnsir (bh. 57)—The fact is, it is not lawful in this country for the junior to marry before the senior.

**215.**—“nī misoe a rád” (one may well think) is generally, in Munster I., followed by ná (nac, nar) :—  
1° nī misoe a rád ná sur binn an ceol leis ceol na cainnte sin (AR. 66)—One may well say that the music of these words was real music to him. 2° nī misoe a rád ná go rai'b an teaspac γ an mórail bainte óib i gceart (AR. 84)—One may well say that their wanton pride was lowered completely.

When the final clause is neg. there will be two negatives :—

3° nī misoe a rád ná ná rai'b aon ponn orca teact aris—One may well say they had no desire to come again.

With these uses of ná, cf. the affirmative ná of is sentences (247).

**216.**—Further remarks on proleptic a :—1° In mod. I. its “term” is usually absolute. In O.I. a G. in grammatical apposition was common, but this is allowed now, only after a lán, much, many, and a tuille, more, followed by an indefinite G. a lán airḡeo—a lot of money : a tuille aimsire—more time. But—a lán de'n airgead úo—a lot of that money ; a tuille dem' aimsir-se—more of my time. 2° In—a oiread san aimsire, airḡeo

(that much time, money)  $\wedge$  anticipates *san* (abs.) and the G. is governed directly by *oireadó*. In *do fáid aimsire*, the G. is governed by *fáid* (*fáid aimsire* being opposed to *fáid stíge*). 3° In expressions like—*Bí si gá innsint conus mar fuair Séadana an sparán*—She was telling how S. had secured the purse— $\wedge$  is required by I. idiom. *Innsint* (being a n.) takes the G., and as the following clause cannot assume a G. form, the relation was expressed clearly by placing the pronominal G. object ( $\wedge$ ) before *innsint*. 4° Proleptic  $\wedge$ , thus established, spread to cases where such necessity did not exist. Thus O.I.  $\wedge$  *masse in chuirp*—the beauty of the body. But mod. I. does not use both proleptic “ $\wedge$ ” and a (definite) G. If  $\wedge$  is used the “term” is absolute; if G. (def.) is used there is no  $\wedge$  :—*máise an chuirp* : *do máise an corp*, etc. 5° The two modes of expression exist side by side but differ in meaning :—*bríg an sgéil*—the meaning of the business (in itself); but  $\wedge$  *bríg an sgéal*—the significance of the matter (in reference to other things).

### 217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns :—

1° **Sín** has its *s-* aspirated sometimes, contrary to phonetic law :—(a) *nac sm i riğeact Beitsebub 'na do eudo* (CMO. 321)—Does not that mean B.’s Kingdom divided in two! (b) *Oeir sé gurb sm é oireac é*—he says that’s just it.

2° **Súd, siúd** are often contemptuous :—(a) *ni blaispríod aon fear acu súd mo biað* (CMO. 337)—Not one of those shall taste my food! (b) *'San easonóir a tugadair súd eile do* (CMO. 222)—In regard to the dishonour those others offered Him.

3° We sometimes find *siúd, sm, so*, close together :—*Ac o'fhanad sé siúd go dtí go dtéigeadó na daoine soin ag tríall air. Ni mar sm do so* (CMO. 171)—But the former would wait till people went over to him. Not so with the latter.

(Here *sé siúd* refers to the Baptist, relegated to a distance by the thought of Jesus; *so* refers to Christ who was engrossing their thoughts and *sm* to the Baptist’s habit already mentioned).

4° *So* and *súd* are sometimes used to denote the

extreme limits of "the universe of discourse":—(a) *O'fág san i gán aon cumas aici ar so ná súd do rád te n-uitaib* (TBC. 188)—This left her powerless to say one thing or another to the Ultonians. (b) *Abaír-se te Fergus, a Fiacha, go scuirfar so i súd orta* (TBC. 123)—Do you, Fiacha, tell Fergus that they shall be delayed in both ways (referred to by Fiacha).

5° So, *súd*, *san*, may, like other pronouns, be absolute:—(a) *má's cun san o'innseann dom a tuigeadh annso mé, ní misoe dom beit ag imteact* (TBC. 93)—If I was brought here simply to be told this, I may as well be going. (b) *Is móroe mo mian é cíos tusa beit gá rád san liom* (FSA). *san*, abs.

6° Sometimes governed directly by preps.—(a) *Dár so i súd*—By this and by that! (by all the oaths). (b) *Níor deagás ann ó són*—I never went since. In—*go dtí seo*, up to this, the pron. is N.

**218.—Interrogative Pronouns** :—Cf. Interrog. Adjs. 192-3. The clauses introduced by interrog. prons. may be N.G.D.A., or they may be absolute:—1° Nom. (a) Subj. N. to *is* :—*Is eot Daoibh conus mar a cuir sé cóiméadur namadó ar neamhriodó ar bur son*—You know how that, for your sakes, He annihilated the power of your enemies. (The interrog. in *conus* is an adj. But see 220). *Is cuma cao déarfaír*—It matters not what you say.

(b) Pred. N. to *is* :—*Sé rudo is mó atá ag déanamh buairt dom, ná cia ragairdó ag triall air*—What's worrying me most is, just who will go to him.

(c) Appositional N.—*Tá sé socair aige céanna fém cao a déanfar dó sé*—He has already decided on his course of action.

(d) Virtual N.—*Bí iongna orainn cao cuige an t-uisce go téir* (CMO. 112)—We wondered what all the water was for.

2° Genitive :—(a) *i dtaoibh cao tá le déanamh agamh* (CMO. 124)—as to what we have to do. (b) *i dtaoibh cé bí ann* (CMO. 155)—as to who it was. (c) *i dtaoibh cé dó gur ceart do an ríseact a tabairt* (Bn. 254)—as to whom he should give the Kingdom.

3° Dative :—(a) *An cao cuige dó beit ag déanamh an*

cur-tré-céile go téir (CMO. 99)—as to why he was causing all this confusion. (b) ar cao é an sagas an beannú san (CMO. 21)—what manner of salutation this was. (c) tám bog ar cao a measann aomne eile (TBC. 163)—my mind is easy as to other people's opinions.

4° **Accusative** :—(a) Toubairt sé teo : “Cao cuige go rababair ar mo torc ?” (CMO. 72)—He said to them :—“Why did ye seek Me?” (b) Innis dúinn cé bí ann—Tell us who was there. (c) Nior tuigeadar cé bí acu (CMO. 305)—They knew not whom they had to deal with.

5° **Absolute** :—(a) Sá fiabhruidhe de cá dtiocfaidh na huic go téir (CMO. 358)—Asking Him whence all the evils should come. (b) Tá ’fios agam cé hé tu (CMO. 155)—I know who you are. (c) Ar misde leat a ó’imnsint dom cé hé tu ? (Bn. 573)—Would you mind telling me who you are ?

**219 (a).**—Ro is used by analogy with ba in interrog. sentences like—Ciarb iad na h-uaisle iasacta? (CMO. 57)—Who were the foreign nobles? This is due to questions containing an oblique rel.—Cárdb' as iad, i cérdb' iad fém (CMO. 57)—*Where they were from*, and who they were. Cf. ciar' Óiob tu? = ciar (hiad an muinntir) ar' Óiob tu?—Who are the people from whom you are sprung? (b) The pres. tense of is is often used, though dependent on past.—Ni toubairt sé cao é an sagas é—He didn't say what sort it was. But the past occurs also :—Cao ab' iad na fiolair (CMO. 356)—What did the eagles signify? (c) Instead of ciar'cu, we find cao é . . . acu :—Cao é an gniomh fósanta acu go measann síb gábháil de clocaib ionnam mar gseall air? (CMO. 333)—Because of which of these good works do ye think of stoning Me?

**220 (a).**—Exclamatory “How!”—1° **CAO É MAR** is deacair do lucht saróbris dul isteac i riúseact Dé! (CMO. 363)—How difficult it is for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God! 2° Cao a bhrui de Óaomh do mealltar! (Im. 20)—How many have been deceived!

(b) **Conus**, and **conus mar** :—The interrog. in conus (cionnus) is an adj., but we may note here the difference

between conus (modal) and conus mar (non-modal) :—  
 1° *Bí minigte go soillteir aige conus ba ceart an tluige*  
*do cimeád gan túr ar neamhriod* (CMO. 209)—He had  
 explained clearly how one should prevent the neutraliza-  
 tion of the Law (modal). 2° *Conus mar a bí ag eirge*  
*teo san obair a tuis sé te déanam dóib* (CMO. 254)—how  
 that they had succeeded in the work He had given them  
 to do. (non-modal).

**221.—Indefinite Pronouns** :—*Aon* is sometimes used  
 pronominally :—1° *Ní creropinn-se ó aon nac n-éireocadó*  
*Éamonn slán* (CCU. 25)—I shouldn't have believed from  
 anyone but that E. would have survived. 2° *Gan aon*  
*acu ag eirge slán* (*Ibid.*). 3° *Is aon mise γ an t-Atair*  
 (CMO. 333)—The Father and I are one. 4° *Úrispró*  
*aon ve síloct na mná so do ceann* (CMO. 3)—One of  
 this Woman's offspring shall crush thy head. 5° *Aon*  
*oem' cairtoib siðe is ead é* (TBC. 149)—He's one of my  
 "supernatural" friends. 6° *Agus verò fios ag na*  
*Seintiù go bpuil i n-Israél aon a déimeann slánú γ fuas-*  
*gait* (bn. 732)—And the Gentiles shall know that there  
 is One in Israel who heals and redeems.

### **222.—The Suffixed Pronouns** :—

1° When two prep. pronouns come together one or  
 both may dispense with the emphatic particle :—*Ní raib*  
*duine de riogha Uladh ná raib fuat γ miosgais aige riam*  
*do Connactaib, γ acu do* (TBC. 14-15)—Not one of the  
 Ulster princes but had always thoroughly detested the  
 Connaught men, and they him. So, when a prep. pron.  
 is added to a verb, and denotes a different person :—  
*Fé mar ba mait lìb a déanfaidh daomh lìb, deiridh-se teo*—  
 Do unto others as you would have others do unto you.

2° A prep. pron. is often used where Eng. has G. or  
 N. :—(a) Instead of G.—*Ba mait leis . . . go sgarfao*  
*anam te colaimh aige* (Im. 20)—He would like his soul  
 to separate from his body ; *Oo úris ar an bforóne acu*  
 (S. 226)—Their patience became exhausted ; *Oo near-*  
*tuis sé amhianta acu* (Ser. 179)—It strengthened their  
 passions ; *Is fior-deisgibuit agam sib feasa* (CS.  
 249)—Henceforth ye are My true disciples.

(b) Instead of N.—1° *An fáid is beo ar an saoſat so* (Im. 21)—As long as he is alive in this world. 2° *Oo ḍubairſ 7 oo ſormairſ aige* (S. 73)—He became black and blue. 3° *Nuaír a ḫabann aon ruo beag 'n-ár gcommib, cuiteann an luſ ar an laſ againn* (Im. 17)—When some trifle goes against us, we collapse utterly.

### 223.—Relative Pronouns :—

I.—We sometimes find the rel. in the A. of Extent in Degree :—(a) *Is maít léi fios abeit aici i gceart, cao é an lion a támis gac ri-fémne* (TBC. 36)—She likes to know exactly with what force each warrior-king has come. (b) *Oem airmeas ar an lion a cuadair tarainn soir* (TBC. 63)—Calculate the number (to the extent of) which they have passed us eastwards. (c) *Pé méid a bero tú caillte leis, tabhrfao-sa ḍuit é, nuaír a bero mé as teact tar n-aís* (CMO. 318)—Whatever you have lost by him, I shall repay you on my return.

II.—The direct relatives are used for the oblique :—  
A.—In temporal clauses. B.—In modal clauses. C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences. D.—In a somewhat rare construction.

A.—1° *Cá ráib an t-airgead an fáid a bios as cuardac?* (S. 40)—where was the money while I was searching? (Or the rel. might here be taken as A. of Extent in Time). 2° *Ón lá úd a ḡaib sé ar an mó rseisear* (S. 38)—since the day he whipped the seven men. 3° *An méid aimsire a bi an t-airgead as do seint* (S.)—all the time the money was out of your possession. (Cf. 1°). Sometimes, however, we find the oblique rel.—(a) *Um an ḡtaca go ráib a mactnam criocnuigte* (S. 62)—by the time he had finished his reflections. (b) *i gcaitream na h-aimsire 'n-a ráib an cat ar siubal* (Mac. 157)—all the time that the battle was in progress. So, often, in Conn. I.—(c) *Trait a mbioð an tsaoire beag aige* (SmB. 129)—while he had a little leisure. (d) *An céad uair eile a ḡtamic peadar isteac cùicí* (SmB. 141)—the next time P. came in to her.

Sometimes we find both direct and oblique forms in one sentence :—1° *Ón lá a tágann annso 7 sur tarairgead*

as an teitín mé (Eis. 88)—From the day I came here and was pulled out of the porridge (Or, *gur* may be explained as a conj., with ellipsis, before it, of — *ta* rámig). 2° Nuair a támig an t-am 'n-ár míle do taois Ó Ceallaig. . . . (n. 24)—when the proper time came for T. O'C. to . . . .

B.—1° Do h-innseád conus ab' eisín niamh do tógaínt as an obair sm (n. 245)—He was told how N. had to be removed from this “job.” 2° Bi iongna a gcoróid ortha a feabhas a déimeadair an gno (S. 183)—They wondered much at how well they did the thing. 3° B'féríoir gur déime-oe a déanfar an gurde, an teactaireacht do cur timcheall uait-se (n. 225)—Perhaps they will pray all the harder if the message is sent round from you. 4° Is fearr is eot vuitse é ná mar is eot v'aoimne eite é—You know it better than anyone else. (The clause—is eot vuitse é is modal, with rel. a understood). 5° But when the compar. clause is itself relative, the following rel. clause ceases to be modal, and so the oblique rel. is used if the sense requires and allows it :—  
 (a) Nil aomne is fearr gurb eot vó san, ná mar vob eot vuitse é (TBC. 1)—No one knows better than you did. (In 4° above the subj. of the 1st is is the modal clause—is eot vuitse é. In 5° (a) the subj. of the 1st is is rel. a understood, and “*Gurb eot vó san*” is connected not with is fearr but with aomne) (Double Rel. Construction, see 223, IV.), and the sense requires the oblique rel.—“to whom that is known”). (b) Tá i n-easnam fós air an níl is mó n-a bfuil gád aige teis (Im. 85)—He is still without the thing he needs most.

The sense does not allow the oblique rel. when the D. relation appears *before* the compar. (or superl.) clause. With 5° (a) cf.—is vó san is fearr is eot conus é déanam—he knows best how to do it. With 5° (b) cf.—is te h-airgead is mó atá gád aois aige—it's money he needs most now.—This is because the last two sentences are complex elliptical forms, in which, according to 223, II. C., the direct rel. must be used for the oblique. 6° On the other hand, in sentences beginning with *cia*, *cád*, followed by a prep. pron. or prep. phrase, before the compar. (or superl.) clause, we have not complex

elliptical forms, but merely a transference of the prep. from its logical place in the sentence. Hence an oblique rel. may appear in the clause following the compar. or superl. clause :—1° *féacaint cia aige doib' fearr n-a mbead an t-ollmucán déanta* (n. 180)—to see who would have made the best preparation. 2° *féacaint cia aige (ba túisse) n-a mbead an fósarðeact fósganta* (bn. 21)—to see which should (soonest) have the rich pasturage. With these two cf.—1s *aigamsa is fearr a bead an t-ollmucán déanta*—It is I who would have made the best preparation ; 1s *aigatsa is túisse a bead an fósarðeact fósganta*—it is you who would have first secured the rich pasturage.—These are complex elliptical sentences, and therefore have the direct rel. (C. below).

C.—1° *Ní ve a déanfí ri-ollam*—not he should be made Chief Bard. This=*ní né* (the person already mentioned) *an té go náéanfí ri-ollam ve*. Here the prep. *ve*, which necessitates the obl. rel. (*go*) is in the subj. But in the complex elliptical form *ve* is transferred to the pred. and so the direct rel. must appear in the subj. 2° *Oír is doic teo gur as méro a scainnte do n-éistfar teo* (CS. 14)—For they think that in their much speaking they may be heard. This=*gurb é méro a scainnte an ní as a n-éistfar teo*. See remark after 1° above.

D.—1° *Cao é an ruo a bì bruadar ar aigne a déanam*?—What did B. intend to do ? *B.* is subj. to *bì*, and we might have expected an obl. rel. The anomaly is due to analogy. *Cao é an ruo a bì as B. ar aigne a déanam*, would be quite normal. So would—*Bì B. ar aigne an ruo san a déanam*. We may look upon 1° as a *contamination* of these two (309).

2° *Sin mar a leanfaimid gán contabairt an bótar atá cosnuigte agamn ar gábáil* (Im. 156)—Thus shall we safely keep to the road we have begun to travel.—Here the rel. may be A. of Extent in Space, after *gábáil*. Cf.—*as gábáil siar an bótar a bios*—I was going along the road westwards.

III (a).—The obl. rel. *a<sup>n</sup>*, *ar<sup>c</sup>* is used in Munster ;—

1° Immediately after a prep.—*Do meas na daoine gurb é Iosa an phró le n-a ráib súil ag na lúoais* (CMD. 256)—The people thought that Jesus was the Prophet for whom the Jews hoped. 2° After *sut*, *sar*—before, lest.—*sut a mbeinn dérdeanach* (S.)—lest I should be late. 3° In such sentences as :—*Ciar' Óibh tu?*—What's your surname?

(b) In U. and Conn. I. this is the chief obl. rel. in use :—1° *Cé as a dtáinig sé* (Smb. 12)—whence it came. Sometimes *go*, *gur* :—*cé'n caoi go bfuair mé bás* (Smb. 81)—how I died.

**IV. Double Relative Construction :**—(a) When we say—*Is dóic liom gur scriobh túme éigin teitir*—I think someone wrote a letter—the clause *gur . . .* is subj. of *is*. But when *is* becomes rel. this construction must be dropped. *Cia is dóic teat go scriobh an teitir?*—Who do you think wrote the letter? Here *is* has already its subj. in rel. *a* (understood), and the following clause cannot be conjunctival (in connection with *is*), but must be relative (in connection with the antecedent of rel.). (b) So—*Oubairt sé go roéanfaidh sé e*—He said he would do it. Here the *go-* clause is object of *oubairt*. But when we say—*Cao é an rúr a'ubairt sé a roéanfaidh sé?* the object of the vb. is now rel. *a*, and the following clause must be relative (in connection with *rúr*), not conjunctival (in connection with *oubairt*). (c) Again, if we wish to say, in I.—He is still without the thing he needs most—there being no superl. (or compar.) adverb in mod. I.—we must have recourse to Double Relative Construction : *Tá in-easnamh fós air an ní*—  
1° (*a*) *is mó*—2° *n-a bfuil gaoth aige leis*.

The two conditions required for Double (or Multiple) Relative Construction are :—1° Co-ordination in construction—the relatives must have the same antecedent. 2° Subordination in meaning—each rel. clause must limit the meaning of the other (or others). The following combinations occur :—

1° Both relatives N.—(a) *Ach ní hé an gluaisteán is mó b'í ag cur air* (Smb. 113)—But it wasn't the motor that worried him most. (b) *Níl aoinne is fearr a támis*

as ná mise (TBC. 6)—No one escaped better than I did.  
 (c) Dein-se aноis an ruo is дóic teat is fearr (Lúc. 49)—  
 Do you now what you think is best.

2° First Rel. N., second A.—(a) Cao ba mait teat a  
 véanfaimn vuit (CMO. 367)—What would you have me  
 do for you ? (b) Tarr orm an níò is mait teat a tаvрfaimn  
 vuit (Bn. 477)—Ask me what you wish me to give you.

3° First Rel. A., second N.—(a) B'sm é sil Antoine  
 bí uirri (SmB. 26)—That was what A. thought was wrong  
 with her. (b) A lán scéalrdeacta i vtaobh neite aеир-  
 tear a тuit amac (CMO. 66)—many stories concerning  
 things which they say happened. (If vеирtear is passive  
 both relatives are N.).

4° Both A.—(a) An ruo a meas sé aеарфароis (CMO.  
 177)—What he thought they'd say. (b) Sm obair nár  
 measas a vеанfi oramn (TBC. 71)—That's a thing I  
 didn't think would be done to us. (Vеанfi, Autonomous).

5° First Rel. N., second D.—Nil aomne is fearr gurb  
 eot vó san ná mar vob' eot vuitse é (TBC. 1)—No one  
 knows that better than you did.

6° First Rel. N., second temporal D.—An faro ba  
 дóic teis a bí aomne ve stioct na Macabéac beo (CMO.  
 9)—As long as he thought any descendant of the M.  
 was alive.

7° First Rel. N., second direct for oblique in complex  
 elliptical clause :—Ar catair Ierusalem is eas is fearr  
 a bí an caoi aige ar an vtréit sm a oibriu—It was on  
 the city of J. he had the best opportunity of putting this  
 trait (aesthetic taste) in practice. This is the complex  
 elliptical form of—is i catair 1. an ait is fearr n-a raib  
 an caoi aige ar an vtréit sm a oibriu air.

8° First rel. A., second direct for oblique (local D.)  
 in complex elliptical clause :—I mBethlehem aoubairt  
 na targaireactai a беарfi an Slánuigceoir (CMO. 40)—  
 It was in B. the prophecies said the S. would be born.=  
 Is i B. an ait aoubairt . . . na mbеарfi. . . . When in  
 is transferred to the pred. it is omitted in the subj.,  
 which therefore has the direct rel. for the oblique :—  
 (Is) i mb. aoubairt . . . a беарfi. . . .

9° First rel. N. or A., second, G.—Tá . . . tagaite  
 orm buairt nár measas riám gurb férdir a leitéro vo

**teacht ar mhaor** (TBC. 133)—A worry has come upon me, the like of which I never thought could fall upon a woman. N.B.—If **nár** be understood as a conj. (as it may be—**buairt** “cóm móir san” **nár** . . .) then **gur** will be a conj. also.

10° First rel. local D. second the same :—’**Sa n-áit** ’n-**ar** **óigí** te Criostarðe **gur** **ceart** an altóir a **beit** (CMO. 146)—where a Christian would think the altar ought to be.—The two clauses logically involved are :—  
 (a) ’**Sa n-áit** (a) **ba óigí** te C. (b) ’**Sa n-áit** n-**ar** **ceart**. . . . When the oblique rel. of (b) is transferred to (a), the direct rel. of (a) is usually transferred to (b), giving—’**Sa n-áit** n-**ar** **óigí** te C. **ba ceart**. . . . (with direct rel. a understood before **ba**). But **gur** may be a conj. Thus—**ba óigí** te C. **gur** . . . ann, is made rel. by transferring the prep. in ann to the rel. **ar**.—’**Sa n-áit** n-**ar** **óigí** . . . **gur ceart**. . . .

11. First rel. D., second N. (by “Inversion,”—see preceding ex.)—**Bí gád aomne ag breiðniú na h-aimsire** n-**ar** **óigí** leo a **beard** an t-árd-Rí ag **teacht** a **baile** (N. 210)—Everyone was looking forward to the time when they thought the High-King would be coming home.—The two clauses involved are :—(a) na h-aimsire (a) **ba óigí** leo (Rel. N.) and (b) na h-aimsire ’n-a **mbeard** (Rel. D.). But the direct and oblique forms are transposed. This “Inversion” is quite common. See next ex.

12° First rel. neg. loc. D., second direct (By “Inversion,” for A.—local D.).—**Cao é a minicise a fhuaras é san áit nár measas a geobann é** (Im. 187)—How often have I found it where I never expected to find it ! The clauses involved are :—(a) sa n-**áit** n-**ar** **measas** (Rel. neg. A.) ; (b) sa n-**áit** n-a **bfuisinn** é (Rel. loc. D). Inversion has taken place. But, as **nár** may be either direct or oblique, the 1st clause remains as it was, the change being apparent only in the 2nd clause.

13° First rel. temporal D., second, the same (Direct for oblique in both) :—(a) **Nuaír is óigí leo a bho ag moladh a céite, is ag cámadh a céite a bho**—When they think they are praising each other, it is just then they are finding fault.—The stress is on the point of time. If it were on the contrast between what they are actually

doing, and what they imagine they are doing, it would run thus :—(b) *is as camed a céile a bíd siad, nuair is dōic leo go mbid siad as molad a céile* (Im. 206)—It's blaming each other they are, when, as they think, they are praising each other !

14° Both clauses modal (Direct for oblique in both):—  
 (a) *Ni d'ubairt sé ná focail tom díreach mar a teastuis uata a déanfað sé* (CMO. 333)—He didn't say the words precisely as they wanted. (b) *Bí cneasta leis, fé mar ba mait leat a beirí leat réin* (Im. 22)—Be gentle with him, as you would like to be treated yourself. (c) *Oeimrð go téir díreach mar a cípró sib a déanfað-sa* (Bn. 278)—Do ye all exactly as ye shall see me do. (d) *Tosnuis neite ar teacht cun cinn fé mar a meas Seteúcas a tioctaróis* (Bn. 757)—Things began to come to a head, as S. thought they would. These exx. (14°) show the "spread" of Double Rel. Construction, and there is something abnormal in each. In (a) *teastuis* has no grammatical subj. In (b) *ba* has no grammatical subj. In (c) *cípró* has no grammatical obj. Nor in (d) has *meas*.

#### V. Multiple Rel. Sentences :—

1° *Oeirim leat gurb é seo an cuma a' d'ubairt sé ba dōic leis ab' fearr a taitnfearð te cár—*I tell you that this is the way he said he thought would best please everyone. Four rel. clauses, co-ordinate in construction, and subordinate in meaning :—(a) *an cuma a' d'ubairt sé* (Rel. A.) ; (b) *an cuma ba dōic leis* (Rel. N.) ; (c) *an cuma ab' fearr* (Rel. N.) ; (d) *an cuma a taitnfearð* (Rel. N.).

2° *Cia hé is dōic leat a' d'ubairt sé do measadar ab' fearr a déanfað an gnior?—*Who think you did he say they thought would be the best to do the deed ? Five co-ordinate clauses, each, however, qualified in meaning by the others :—(a) *an té (a) is dōic leat.* (b) *an té a' d'ubairt sé.* (c) *an té do measadar.* (d) *an té ab' fearr.* (e) *an té a déanfað.*

#### VI. Negative Relatives :—

(a) *ná* is used in Munster, outside the past tense, with all verbs, except *is*. In U. and Conn. *nac* is usual.

(b) *nac*, everywhere, as direct and obl. rel. with *is* (outside past tense).

(c) *nár*, with past and condit. of *is*, and the past of other verbs [except those in which *no* combines with the vb. itself (*raibh*), and verbs which do not take *no*—(*fuaireann*)].

### VII. The Relative in Compar. and Superl. Clauses :—

(a) *Nil aoinne is fearr gurb eol tó é ná mar is eol duit-se é*—No one knows it better than you do.

(b) *Sin é an rudo is fearr atá ar eolas aige*—That's what he knows best.

(c) Note that the I. for “that is the best thing he knows” is :—*Sin é an rudo is fearr tá bfuil ar eolas aige*.

**VIII. Interrogative and Relative :—**Contrast—1° *Cao cuige go nroubairt sí ná raib aon mait inni?* 2° *Cao cuige a'roubairt sí ná raib aon mait inni?* 1° is a single rel. question—why did she say she was no good? 2° is a double rel. question—what was it that she said she was no good at?

Similarly :—(a) *Catom a'roubairt sé go nroéanfaró sé é?* (b) *Catom a'roubairt sé a' roéanfaró sé é?* (a) is a single rel. question—when did he make the statement that he would do it? (b) is a double rel. question—when, did he say, he would do it? (referring to the time of the doing, not of the statement).

### IX. The Compound Relative :—The following combinations occur :—

A.—Both antecedent and rel. N.—*Bí sac ar cónr i ar cuibe a' roéanam róib roéanta aige róib* (CMO. 137)—He had done for them everything it was right and fitting to do for them= *sac ní* (a) *ba cónr*. Anteced. N. to *bí*; rel. N. to *ba*.

B.—Both anteced. and rel. A.—*Oéanfar a nroéanfarí tiom a' roéanam*—I'll do everything you tell me. Anteced. A. after *oéanfar*; rel. A. governed by *oéanfarí*.

C.—Anteced. A., Rel. N.—*agus sac a mbameadó ro teigisti iao* (CMO. 258)—and all who touched (the hem of His cloak) were healed.—Anteced.—Projected A. (N. if *teigisti* is passive); rel. N. to *bameadó*.

D.—Anteced. N., rel. A.—*Tógsfar uairí gád a measann sé atá aige*—All he thinks he has shall be taken from him.—Anteced.—N. to *tógsfar* (if passive); rel. A. governed by *measann*. There is Double Rel. Construction here. If the 2nd clause were alone it would be—*gád a bfuil aige*.

E.—Anteced. D., Rel. N.—*Beró leagamh sios ar seomáiní, 'Sá maireann de n-a bpór* (fC. 31)—Shoneens and all survivors of their seed shall be put down! Anteced. D. (or A.) gov. by *ar*. Rel. N. to *maireann*.

F.—Anteced. D., Rel. A.—*Tá riolta acu linn as ar d'imeadair o'éagsúir riam orainn* (TBC. 146)—They have paid us for all the wrongs they ever did us.—Anteced. D. gov. by *as*. Rel. A. gov. by *d'imeadair*.

G.—Both Anteced. and Rel. D.—<sup>1°</sup> *Márbuigðar an uile ruo i bfuirm dumé de shioct Sædeal dár féadatar teact suas leis* (SG. 54)—They slew everything in the shape of human Irishman they could reach. Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; rel. D. (A) gov. by *te* (in *leis*). <sup>2°</sup> *Sráðmar tar gád ní dár tús dumé sráð do riam pós* (Im. 248)—Loveable beyond anything man ever yet loved.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. gov. by *do*. <sup>3°</sup> *Táinig amac as an loc an capall doib' ailtne dár leogas mo súil riam air* (Br. 33)—There came out of the lake the most beautiful horse I ever laid eyes on.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. (A.) gov. by *ar*. <sup>4°</sup> *Má caiteann tu gád dovent dár bfaigðar ar an saoighéal so tú*—If you spend every Advent during which you're left in this world . . . . Anteced. D. gov. by *de*. Rel. oblique temporal D. (or A. of Extent in Time).

For fuller consideration of these exx. see 310.

H.—Anteced. G., Rel. N. (A.).—*Ac bí uaiste ar na Samaratánais in-éagsais ar márbuigðeard* (Mac. 274)—But there were others amongst the S. besides those who were slain. Anteced. G. gov. by *éagsais*. Rel. N. (or A. if *márbuigðeard* is Auton.).

I.—Anteced. N., Rel. G.—*Sín a bfuil fíos agam* (bn. 454)—That's all I know.

J.—Anteced. absolute; Rel. N. or A.—*Ní fheadar an fearrde iad ar túsas doibh* (S.)—I wonder are they improved by my gifts.

## CHAPTER V.

### SYNTAX OF THE VERB.

---

#### The Copula.

224.—*is* is merely a logical copula, and forms no part of the predicate. *E.g.*—1° It must never be stressed. If it were a real predicate it would be stressed, when emphatic, like all other verbs (which are real predicates or part-predicates). 2° One cannot answer a question with *is* alone, although one can with practically every other verb. Why? Because *is* by itself conveys no information—*is* not a predicate. Since it is never stressed, and is not a predicate, it is used to introduce the predicate. This gives us the rule for all (or nearly all) *is* sentences:—(a) VS. (Verb-Subj.) must always be avoided. (b) VP (p) (Verb-Pred.) must always be secured. (When the vb. *is* expressed. If *is* often omitted). N.B.—P (p). P=the real pred. p=one of the prons.—*e*, *i*, *tao*, *eaō*, used to take its place. The real pred. is often too long, or too cumbrous, to come immediately after *is*, in which case one of these prons. takes its place. Or P. is placed elsewhere, to secure some special shade of meaning, and in this case also p. must take its place. The rule may be put, graphically, thus:—  
(a) —VS. (b) +VP (p). The rule does *not* say:—  
1° That we must begin with the vb. That is not necessary and is often impossible. 2° That P., the real pred. must come immediately after *is*. That is not necessary, either, and is often impossible. 3° That the subj. must come last. Unnecessary, also, and often impossible. The rule, in fact, says nothing about the position of the subj. except negatively; nor of P., except that, if it does not follow *is* immediately, then “p” must take its place.

**225 (a).** Subj. and Pred.—The grammatical subj. is the word, or group of words, pointing out the person, place, name, thing or group, about which the assertion (or denial) is made, or the question asked. The grammatical pred. is the word, or group of words, pointing out what is affirmed, denied, or queried about what the subj. denotes.

(b) Any word or group capable of being subj. or pred. is called a “term.” The pred. is either definite or indefinite. A pred. is definite when it is an individual term; indefinite, when it is a general term.

(c) An individual term is one which can be asserted, in the same sense, of only one person, place or thing, or one group,—Séadna, an peann so—Séadna, this pen. A general term is one which may be applied, in the same sense, to each of an indefinite number of persons, places, things, names or groups :—ouine, páirc, bóro, páoraig (see 261) sgrata—person, field, table, Patrick, company.

**226.**—This gives us the division of is sentences into—  
 A.—Classification (pred. indefinite). B.—Identification (pred. definite). In C.—Complex Elliptical sentences, the pred. is either def. or indef. (so that this class is a sub-division of A. and B.).

A.—Classification Sentences :—Type I.—The pred. is a common noun. The subj. may be a noun, pron., phrase or clause :—

1° is oncú do Connachtair an cù, is mí-ctú do Connachtair a clú (TBC. 96)—The “Hound” (Cúchulainn) is a wolf to Connaught-men, his fame, to them, is ill-fame. 2° is bean gan eagla mise (TBC, 3)—I am a fearless woman, gan eagla narrows down the meaning of bean, but not completely. It remains a general term. 3° ní fios conus oirfeadh do congnamh vúinn (TBC. 15)—There's no knowing how your help might suit us. The subj. here is the complex noun—conus . . . vúinn.

**227.**—Type II.—The pred. is an adj. (equivalent to a common noun):—1° is buan gan ssur gul na gaoithe (CCU. 19)—The moaning of the wind continues un-

ceasingly. 2° *is minic saoī d'aoī* (UP.)—Often a clown's son is a sage. 3° *is fearr fuisgeall an mādaró ná fuisgeall an māgaró*—Better the leavings of the dog than those of the cynic! 4° *is fearr teat ná meat*—“Half a loaf is better than no bread.”

**228.**—Type III.—The pred. is an adj. but the subj. involves a rel. clause:—1° *is trom an t-uatac ameolas* (UP.)—Ignorance is a heavy burden, Subj., *an t-uatac* (*a is*) *ameolas*, 2° *is mait an saoġat é*—*má maireann sé i břao*—The times are good—if they last long, (Said to foolish young people), Subj., *an saoġat* (*a is*) *é*. 3° *is cruaró an cainnt i sm* (CMO, 260)—These are hard words, Subj., *an cainnt* (*a is*) *i sm*. 4° *ní mait an tuċt faire sib* (Bn. 407)—You are but indifferent guards. Subj., *an tuċt faire* (*a is*) *sib*.

**229.**—Type IV.—The pred. appears to be a proper n. but is really a general term:—1° *agus (is) Éamonn a stáir* (S. 20)—And his father is “an E.” also. 2° *is “Connla” a břoġ as niam air*—N. called him “Connla.” Subj. of *is*:—*an ainn a břoġ as n. air*. The sentence is nominal. 3° *Oubairt sé gurb asarias ab ainn do* (Bn. 574)—He said his name was A.

**230.**—Type V.—The pred. is a prep. pron., or prep. phrase.—1° *is doic liom go raib si mgrád leis go mórtamall* (TBC. 5)—I think she was very much in love with him for a while.—The pred. *doic liom*=a thing likely in my opinion. 2° *ac ní creidteann sib-se, mar ni oem’ caoire-se sib* (CMO. 333)—But you do not believe, for you are not of My Flock.

**231.**—Emphatic Forms:—Type VI.—1° *tréad imtiſte amúda ab eaō iao* (CMO. 245)—They were a strayed flock. 2° *llaisneas gan áitreatb is eaō an áit seo* (CMO. 255)—This place is a homeless desert. 3° *Rógaire píil ab eaō é* (Bn. 807)—He was a treacherous rogue. 4° *longna saoġat ab eaō an teact san* (Bn. 826)—This monument was a world’s wonder. N.B.—(a) The predicates here are very strong, and call for an emphatic

position. (b) The pron. *eas* must be inserted after the vb. in order to avoid "VS."

**232.**—Type VII.—Emphatic form of II. 1° *Olc is eas an peacao*—Sin is an evil. Type III has no more emphatic form. The adj. pred. there is already very strongly emphasized.

**233.**—Type VIII.—Emphatic form of Type IV. 1° *Aiba is eas is ainn do'n cric sin*—A. is the name of that country. 2° *Finnbeannac is eas is ainn do*—White-horn is his name (English often begins with the logical predicate).

**234.**—Type IX.—Emphatic form of Type V.—*Linn-ne ab eas an reiro* (msf.)—The moor belonged to us. N.B.—Some exx. of Type V are not emphasized by means of *eas* and the projected predicate. E.g.—*Is e is doic liom go raib si i ngrao leis . . .* is stronger than 230, 1°, but is an Identification sentence of the Type VpSP. (246).

**235.**—Type X.—*Cailin surb ainn vi Sile na mbiat*—A girl named G. na mb. It has been said that S. na mb. (the grammatical subj.) is the logical pred., and that *ainn vi* (the grammatical pred.) is the logical subj. This is wrong. If we wish to make S. na mb. pred. we have two ways of doing so :—(a) *Cailin sur S. na mb. ab ainn vi*. (b) *Cailin surb e ainn vi uirti S. na mb.*

**236.**—Type XI.—In the last ex. in 235 the pred. remains indefinite. It means "a name spelled—S-i-t-e," etc. Such sentences must be distinguished from Type II b, Identification (247). The particle *na*, which precedes the pred. there, has found its way into the present Type also :—1° *Is e ruo a vi aige na ceao oet moeic a cius ve miltib corp* (Bn. 569)—He found himself with only 185,000 corpses! 2° *Is e ainn a vi air na Seana* (S. 6)—His name was S. 3° *Is e cead-chrann tarla dhó soileach mhór* (BK. 1)—The first tree he met was a large willow.

**237.**—Type XII.—*Oa mba ná beo sé fágálta roim ré aige* (S. 67)—if he had not got it beforehand. Usually explained by saying that the pred. *buo=a fact*, is understood. It is more satisfactory to take *ná . . . aige* as pred. with subj. understood at the end (*é=the state of affairs in question*).

**238.**—Type XIII.—SVP.—The subj. is a rel. and must come first. 1° *Nil aomne is fearr a támis as ná mise* (TBC. 6)—No one has come out of it better than I. The subj. (rel. *a*) is understood before *is*. There is Double Rel. Construction (223, IV).

**239.**—Type XIV.—A long pred. is often divided, the fundamental noun coming first, then VpS+the remainder of pred. This we may call “The Split Predicate”. 1° *Fir ab' ead iad ná leosfaid a scroidé ná a n-aigse óibh panamant sa bainte*—They were men whose hearts or minds would not allow them to stay at home. 2° This is usual, also, when the pred., though short, contains a rel.—*Bearn is ead i ná ruit puinn céití aici*—She's a woman of but little sense. Conn. I. sometimes does not avail of this order:—*Bearn nár tuig sé aon áird uirri ariam b'ead i siúd* (SmB. 184)—Instead of *Bearn ab' ead i siúd nár . . .*

**240.**—Type XV.—SVPs.—The subj. is projected for emphasis, and a pron. (s) takes its place at the end:—1° *An teagass so a tugaim-se, ní liom é* (CS. 245)—This doctrine which I give is not Mine (Much better than—*ní liom . . .*). 2° *Óir an áit na bfuilir a' seasam, is talam naomha é* (Bn. II. 1)—For the place where thou standest is holy ground.

**241.**—Type XVI.—SPVps.—*Na sgealta beaga san a' innseadh lósa, neite ab ead iad a tuit amac* (CMO. 318)—These little stories which J. told were things that had happened. This is much neater than—*neite do tuit amac ab ead na sgealta. . . .* Note the split predicate (239).

**242.—Type XVII.—PS.** The verb is omitted :—  
 1° *násarét ainnm an baile sin* (CMO. 17)—The name of this village was N. 2° *muire ab' ainnm thí* (CMO. 331)—Her name was M. 3° *fada téro teist an omis* (AÓR. 210)—Far fares the fame of generosity. 4° *Tríú a gníðeas treabao* (UP.)—It is rivalry that makes good ploughing (*tríú*=M. *tnút*).

**243.—Type XVIII.—SP.**—*An cuairt is fearr cuairt gearr* (UP.)—The best visit is a short one. Another way of saying *cuairt gearr* (is eadó) *an cuairt is fearr*.

**244.—Type XIX.—PsS.**—*Cao é an rónas é seo atá ar siúbal?* (TBC. 157)—What's all this mischief that's going on? *Cao* is pred. N. to *is*. *É* is proleptic subj. (s), the real subj. being *an rónas* (a *is*) *é seo*, etc.

### B.—Identification Sentences :—

**245.—Type I.—VpPS.**—1° *is é leigheas na lobair is mó cuireadh iongna γ attaict ar gac aoinne* (CMO. 162)—It was the curing of the lepers that most amazed everyone. 2° *is é briatár Dē an siol* (CMO. 232)—The seed is the Word of God. 3° *'Si an tias is truime is iste cromas a ceann* (UP.)—The heaviest ear most lowly bends its head (A commendation of Humility). 4° *'Sé an t-eadaic a gni an tume* (UP.)—Clothes make the man.

**246.—Type II. a.—VpSP.**—Two reasons for the evolution of this Type :—(a) A long cumbrous pred., if placed immediately after *is*, would have spoiled the sentence. It is, therefore, put at the end, a pronoun taking its place after *is*, in order to avoid VS! 1° *Aigus is é freagra a fuair sé* :—“*Aingeal is eadó mise. Is mé an trimadó n-aingeal sur tugas déireadh do inbriu ar son an tsílanuigteora. Aigus aonás tá tri gurde aigat le fagail ó Dia na glóire. Iarr ar Dia aon trí gurde is toil leat tigeobair iad. Ac tá aon cónairle amán agam le tabairt duit. Ná dearmad an Trócaire.*” Here the pred. contains six complete sentences, and could not possibly be put immediately after *is*. (b) To put even a short pred. after *is* would sometimes sacrifice some important shade

of meaning. A vivid, rhetorical form is required, and Type II supplies it :—<sup>2°</sup> Is é is fáoda tiom go mbeiró an baiste sm téanta (CMO. 326)—I long exceedingly to have that baptism accomplished. <sup>3°</sup> B'é b'fáoda leis go raib sé amuis (S. 39)—The one thing he longed for was to get out (See note on this sentence, "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. I, 16-17).

**247.**—Type II. b.—VpS ná P.—More vivid and rhetorical than the preceding, and should be used only when rhetoric is justified.—<sup>1°</sup> B'é cómarta é sm ná a bás γ a aiséirge réims (CMO. 274)—This sign meant precisely His own death and resurrection. <sup>2°</sup> Sé rudo a òem fosa ná ceist a cur cùca (CMO. 336)—J. simply put them a question. <sup>3°</sup> Is é rudo a òem sé ná an òreit do cur ar at-ia (Mac. I, 59)—He simply postponed the judgment. <sup>4°</sup> B'i seord i sm ná Òaisti (bh. 616)—The treasure I mean was Vashti.

**248.**—Type II. c.—VpS ac P.—Canon O'Leary does not use this. But his books are full of the rhetorical questions and negations from which this type has developed.—<sup>1°</sup> Cia gseobadh tar an noorus ac Séadna? (S. 89)—Who should pass the door but S? This leads to—b'é òume gsaibh tar an noorus ac S. <sup>2°</sup> Nior òem sé ac eirge γ imteact amac (CMO. 175)—He just rose up, and went out. The information given here can be conveyed in at least seven different ways, each with its own shade of meaning :—(a) O'éirig sé γ o'imtiis sé amac (Bald statement of fact). (b) Do òem sé eirge γ imteact amac—He *deliberately* rose and went out. (c) Nior òem sé ac eirge γ imteact amac—He *simply*, etc. (d) Cao a òeanfad sé ac . . . (Rhetorical). (e) 'Sé rudo a òem sé . . . [More vivid than (b) or (c)]. (f) Sé rudo a òem sé ac . . . [more vivid still than (e)]. (g) Sé rudo a òem sé ná . . . (most vivid of all).

**249.**—Type II. d.—VpS mar P.—Here, mar is pleonastic, just as "because" is, sometimes, in E. We say—(a) He stayed at home (the fact), because he was unwell. So, in I.—O'fan sé sa baile, mar ni raibh sé

ar fógnam. (b) A rhetorical form :—E.—The reason why . . . was (because) he was unwell. I.—'Sé cùis gur fán sé sa baile (mar) ná raib sé ar fógnam :—Oibhaint sé gurb é cùis n-a noeig sé i bpolac, mar go raib eagal air (Bn. 3)—He said he went into hiding, because he was afraid.

250.—Development of ná :—1° From neg. ná in :—  
 (a) rhetorical questions. (b) rhetorical negations ;  
 2° comparative ná.

1°a :—Cia déarfao ná gur deas-dúine é ?—Who will say he wasn't a good man ? This leads to—sé déarfao gac aoinne (ná) gur d.o. é.

1°b :—Ní bioð fios as aoinne ná gur dúine de muinntir na tire é (N. 138)—No one knew but that he was one of the natives. This leads to—'Sé ceapao gac aoinne (ná) gur dúine, etc.

2° Níl aon cuma is pearr cum na hoibre déanam ná an Saolann do saotru ins na h-áiteanaib 'na bfuil sí beo rós—There's no better plan for accomplishing the work than to work up I. wherever it is still living. This leads to—'Sé cuma is pearr . . . ná . . . The mod. compar. and superl. having the same form helps this assimilation.

251.—Type III.—VpSP.—In Type II the subj. contains a rel. clause, implicit or explicit. In Type III the subj. is simple—a noun preceded by the art., or followed by an adj. Contrast with Type I.—1° Gurb i an iomáis uo an nádúinr daonna (KTB. 3)—That that image represents human nature. 2° 'Sé an namaro an peacao (Ser.)—Sin is the enemy (E. begins with the logical pred.). The context shows that Can. O'L. was writing about "the enemy" not "sin." The same words, in the same order, might be a sentence in Type I. One might be talking of sin and saying that it is the enemy. We must look to the context to guide us as to which Type is in question.

252.—Type IV.—PVpS.—The pred. here, as in Type VI. Classification, is projected, for rhetorical effect.—

1° An bean cosnochtáite is i a bì ann (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman. 2° An níó is creidreamhant róib is é is mián leo a séanád—The very thing that is a credit to them they want to disown. (E., as I., often begins with the logical predicate). 3° An níó atá i an teanb is é a ghníó an teanb (UP.)—What the child sees, that the child does. 4° 'Té cuireas 'sé bámeas (UP.)—He who sows reaps. 5° An tuis ná fáctar is i fóireann (Proverb)—The herb that helps cannot be found.

253.—Type V.—PS.—1° eom báiste an mac san (CMO. 17)—This child was John the Baptist. 2° Tomád na lám a bámeas an cat (UP.)—Its the number of hands that wins the battle. 3° Ná méara na súile is géine brios ag dall (SMb. 66)—The fingers are the sharpest eyes of the blind.

254.—Type VI.—SP.—1° Mise carlin an Tigearna (CMO. 19)—Behold the Handmaid of the Lord. 2° Beartá teanga i labairt—If a language is to live, it must be spoken. 3° Cabair an dochtáin béal na h-uairge (UP.)—The mouth of the grave is the poor man's refuge. 4° Ceo ar abáinn, ceo an tsónais, Ceo ar cnoc ceo an donais (UP.)—A river-mist is prosperous, a hill-mist unfortunate. N.B.—Type V is related to Type I or Type IV, in both of which P precedes S. But Type VI is related to Type II, in which S. precedes P. Type V therefore, when dependent, becomes Type I or Type IV :—An ruo is annam is iongantac (V) becomes Type I :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é an ruo is annam is iongantac. Or—Type IV—Deir an seanfocal an ruo is annam gurb é is iongantac. But—Tir gan teanga tir gan anam (VI) becomes Type II :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é saighas tir gan teanga ná tir gan anam.

255.—Type VII.—VPS.—The pred. is a pers. pron. 1 or 2 p., or a demonstrative, 3 p., or a pers. pron. strengthened by réim :—1° Má's tu an Criost (CMO. 333)—If Thou art the Christ. 2° Measaim gurb i réim is pearra a chuis a cainnt (CMO. 113)—I judge that She

herself understood His words best. 3° *mar is tu do réab mo crorðe ó céite* (CCU. 50)—For it is you who have torn my heart asunder.

256.—Type VIII.—VpPS.—Same as Type I, except that the subj. is here one of the prons. which are preds. in VII. It has been said that in Ident. sentences these prons. must always be pred. This is wrong :—1° *An é an cárta duibh é smí?* Ni hér, ac *an cárta báin*—Is that the *black card*? No, but the *white one*. *An é smí an c. v?*=Is that the black card? And the answer would be, e.g., *ni hér*; *smí é é*—No—here it is. The same Eng. words, in the same order, convey at least three different meanings :—(a) Is that the b. c? *An é smí an c. v?* (b) Is that the *black* c? *An é an c. v. é smí?* (c) Is that the b. *card*? *An é an cárta v. é smí?* (with emphasis on *cárta*). There is a tendency (a very wrong tendency) to make (a) do duty for all three. 2° *is é mo corp é seo*—This is My Body—This is the correct translation of “*Hoc est Corpus Meum.*” 3° *Is é Críst Mac Dé sin* (Dott. II, 13)—This is Christ the Son of God. Cf.—4° *Só fior vob é mac Dé é smí* (C.S. 83)—Truly, this was the Son of God.

257.—Type IX.—VpSP.—The same as Type II. a., except that the proleptic pron. is *eao*. It is common in the literature down to the early modern period :—1° *is eao aoubairt “ní tábair tóime uairí an níodh nac bí aige”* (KTB. 8)—This is what he said :—“One does not give away what one has not.” 2° Common in “*mar v eo*” when the *eo* is proleptic :—*mar v eo go rai b sé ar meisge*—pretending that he was drunk. *é* (understood)=the state of affairs, is subj. of *v* (=*baeo*).

258.—Type X.—SVpPs.—1° *An té aoubairt an cainnt smí, b' é a gceann go léir é* (CMO. 366)—He who said these words was the Head of them all. The *projection* emphasizes the subj. The reference is to our Lord. 2° *An rudo gur doicteis an nouine gurb é a teas é* (CMO. 195)—What one imagines is for one's good.—This could hardly be put neatly in any other form.

259.—Type XI.—PsS.—1° Cao iad na neite is gátar-áigé? What are the most necessary things? A definite answer is expected. 2° Cia hé an peár é sm? Who's that man? P=Cia; s=e; S. an peár é sm.

260.—Type XII.—SVP.—In relative sentences like—  
is é Iosa is Criost ann—Jesus is the Christ. A sentence of Type I, but the subj. (an té a is Criost ann) is Type XII.—S=a (rel. understood). P.=Criost.

261.—Note on Proper Names.—There are at least four uses of words like Éamonn :—1° agus (is) Éamonn a atair (S. 20)—and his father is “an Éamonn” also. Éamonn indefinite. 2° Is é Éamonn fé moeár e—It is É. who is responsible. Éamonn definite—an individual term. 3° Éamonn is ainnm do—his name is É. Here É. does not point out a person at all, but a *name*. It means—“a name spelled E-a-m-o-n-n” and is therefore indefinite. 4° Sé ainnm a bí air ná Éamonn.—A nominal sentence like 3°. É. indefinite.

262.—The proleptic pron. in Type I. Ident. is due to Types II, III, and IV. In these the pron. is absolutely essential (in order to avoid VS). Without adverting to the fundamental difference between these and Type I. people began to insert the pron. in the latter. But a definite noun may come immediately after is (even outside Type XII, where such is nearly always the case):—1° Ni h-anois an céad uair a bhéar aitne curta agat ar m' peirs (lúc. 14)—This is not the first time you'll have experienced my anger. 2° Is anois é (CS. 223)—It is now. 3° Ni h-morú ná moé a cuireas aitne ort—It isn't to-day or yesterday I came to know you.

All these predicates contain the definite article.

### C.—Complex Elliptical Sentences :—

263.—1° Ni mar geall ar foclairí cainnte do molfar tú (lúc. 4)—It is not for mere words you will be praised=ni focair cainnte an ní go molfar tú mar geall air. (Pred. indef. Observe the direct rel. do in the first form). 2° Is dóim-sa do gealladh i γ is ormsa atá an peall déanta (TBC. 196)—It was to me she was pro-

mised, and it is I who have been betrayed=is mise an té sur gealladh do i,  $\eta$  is mise an té ar a bpuil an peall deanta (Preds. definite). 3° Is ó tuairidh cun Gallilei a tuig sé agaird (CMO. 313)—He turned northwards to Gallilee=is i an airidh tuairidh cun S. an airidh ar ar tuig sé agaird (Pred. definite). 4° Ní liomsa a báimeann an caimint sin—Those words do not refer to me=ní mise an té go mbáimeann an caimint sin leis (Pred. definite). All such sentences should be expanded in this way, to secure a clear subj. and a clear predicate.

### Idioms with the Verb is.

264 (a).—The prep. **te** with certain adj. preds. denotes the subjective view ; **do** the objective fact :—an ruo is péroir teat, is péroir ouit é—What you *think* you can do, you *can* do. (b) Idioms with **beag**, **mór** :—

1° Nár coir nár beag vi a bpuil aici céana díob (TBC. 15)—Ought she not to be satisfied with what she has of them already ?

2° Is beag acu sarobreas gan mórciú (TBC. 35)—They think little of riches without reputation.

3° Ni ro-mór agam-sa é (TBC. 53)—I don't think very much of him.

4° Ba beag agam mo shaoisial a beit buan nō diombuan (TBC. 63)—I cared little whether my life were long or short.

5° Nac beag teat a luata (TBC. 76)—that you think it all too soon.

6° Ni mór te Dia doibh an sarobreas do sgaipe cóm tuis is is mait leo é (CMO. 343)—God does not begrudge it them to squander their wealth as fast as they like.

265 (a).—Corrective **ní h-ead**—used, like the English “nay,” to tone down a too-strong assertion, or to add to a too weak one :—1° Is docta, ní head, ac is deimín (CMO. 183)—It is likely, nay, certain. 2° Ni head, ac abalta ar a cur fiaċaint ar mioscais an Āirseora glóire a tabairt do Dia (CMO. 3)—Nay more, able to compel the devil's malice to glorify God. 3° Ni h-ead, ac do piorad an caimint o tosac (CMO. 5)—Nay, more, the words were verified from the very start.

(b) **b'férdir**, perhaps :—1° The Fut. tense is not, as a rule, used after **b'férdir**, though it may be used before it :—*Fiafrócadh túime, b'férdir, cao na taoibh sur cuir an Slánuigteoir an mallaist ar an scrann* (CMO. 383)—Perhaps someone will ask why the Saviour cursed the tree. Once Can. O'L. has the Fut. after it :—*b'férdir go maithprio sé do peacai duit* (Bn. 665)—Maybe He will pardon you your sins. 2° *b'férdir go b'fiafrócadh túime éigin cao na taoibh sur labair fosa cainte nár tuigeas* (CMO. 327)—Perhaps someone will ask why Jesus used words that were not understood. 3° *b'férdir* may be followed by—The Pres. Indic. actual or habitual ; the Past; the Imperfect; the Conditional. The Fut. may, of course, follow *má's férdir* ; and the vb. n. may follow both *má's férdir*, and *b'férdir*.

### 266.—*ní fuláir* ; *ní mór* ; *ní fuláir nó . . .*

(a) *fuláir*=excess, hence *ní fuláir*=it is not excessive, i.e., it is necessary. *ní mór* has often a similar meaning, but perhaps *ní fuláir* is stronger.

(b) 1° *ní fuláir*, expresses logical necessity, or duty or obligation (with implicit reference to some responsible agent) :—*ní fuláir sur mar sin atá*, it must be so (log. nec.) ; *ní fuláir é déanamh*—it must be done (by somebody). 2° *ní fuláir do . . .* expresses duty, obligation—with explicit reference to an agent :—*Niorbh fuláir do dui γ aðbarr do solátar* (S. 7)—he had to go to procure some (leather). 3° *ní fuláir nó . . .* expresses logical necessity only.—*ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort*—you must be tired. “*nó*” is due to ellipsis :—*ní fuláir (sur túime ana-lároir tu) nó . . .*—You must (be a very strong man) or else you’re tired.

(c) When *ní fuláir* is not itself dependent, either the direct or the dependent form follows *nó*. It is a question of whether the latter clause (in the full sentence, where nothing is suppressed) is conceived as being the second member of a disjunctive proposition, in construction with *ní fuláir* ; or as an independent conclusion, formed by the rejection of the statement introduced by *ní fuláir* :—Thus :—

A.—*ní fuláir*—(1) *sur túime ana-lároir tu* ; *nó* (2) *go*

ófuit tuirse ort. Here go in (2) is just as natural as sur in (1). Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó go ófuit tuirse ort. Here, the only surprising thing is the illogical retention of nó.

B.—ní fuláir (1) sur tui me ana-láir tu ; nó (2)—independent conclusion, not in construction with ni fuláir—ta tuirse ort. Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó ta tuirse ort—which is more abnormal than the final form of A. Only the retention of nó saves it from being a monstrosity.

(d) When ni fuláir becomes nac fuláir, nár fuláir, the clause following nó will always be dependent. But the dependence may be either on nac fuláir, the two parts of the disjunction (in the full sentence) being in construction with it, and only through it, with the introductory verb. Thus :—

A.—Cao déarfao na daoine ac nár fuláir—(1) sur tui me dána tar na beartaib é ; nó (2) nár gád ó féin aon eagla beit aige roimis an ainnm. Here, if we suppress (1) the resultant sentence (S. chap. 19) necessarily shows the dep. form after nó, but (thus conceived) the dependence is due to nár fuláir, and not to déarfao. Or the dependence may be due to déarfao. Thus :—

B.—Cao déarfao na daoine ac—(1) nár fuláir (sur tui me dána tar na beartaib é), nó (2) nár gád . . . ainnm. Here, nár following nó depends directly on déarfao.

**267.—Is cuma nó**—equivalent to, like, as good as, as bad as, etc., is got, not by suppressing one member, but by a little transposition :—From sentences like 1° Ba cuma linn báis nó beata annsan (TBC. 152)—Life or death would be all the same to us, then—are easily derived sentences like the following :—2° Is cuma nó muc tui me gán seift (Proverb)—A shiftless fellow is as useless as a swine. (<is cuma o. gán s. nó m). 3° Is cuma nó báis an beata so—This life is not much better than death (<is cuma an b. so nó báis). Sometimes there is no transposition :—4° Is cuma a gniomh nó an splannc ! (TBC. 113)—His action is as quick as lightning ! Transposed :—Is cuma nó an splannc a gniomh,

5° *Is cumaimeass a náhao e nó leon i measg caorac* (TBC. 51)—Among his foes he is ruthless as a lion. Transposed :—*Is cuma nó leon é.* 6° *Is cuma é nó comneal aðanta* (TBC. 51)—He is a lighted taper (Cuma nó tones down the metaphor. Transposed :—*Is cuma nó c. a. é*). 7° *Is cuma nó aincéart tom-ceart* (Proverb)—Bare justice is not much better than injustice (<*is cuma l.c. nó aincéart*). 8° *Is cuma tu am' aigne-se nó aingeal ón dTigearna* (bn. 413)—To my mind you are just an Angel from the Lord. Transposed :—*Is cuma nó a. . . . tu.*

Notice how the meaning of “ *is cuma nó* ” is coloured by the context.

268.—Very common is the following idiom :—

1° *Ní brúigte go out i n-aois, is ní múnte go coigríc*—One is not down and out till old, and he who has travelled is most polite. 2° *Ní féasta go rósta, 's ní céasta go póstta* (Proverb)—The best feast is a roast, and marriage is the greatest torture ! 3° With *ac* instead of *go* :—*Ní gloire go gréim ac neamh, ní torann tréan ac tóirneac* (Oþ. 54)—No glory like the Sun, save Heaven, No really loud report but thunder. 4° *Ní h-aicteantas go h-aomhigheas* (Proverb)—“ If you want to know me, come and live with me.”

269 (a) ***Is minic gur*** :—When any vb. other than *is* follows *is minic*, there is a direct rel. (for oblique, in temporal clause). But an *is* clause is introduced by *gur* (*nac, nár*) :—1° *Is minic . . . gurb ead is giorra bim* ouit (Im. 160)—It is oftentimes . . . I am nearest to you. 2° *Is minic a bhos i gcurdeactam* γ *gurb fearr* liom ná beinn (Im.)—I have often been in company, and would rather I had not. 3° *Is minic gur bocht an gnó báinn e γ gur follam* (Im.)—Oftentimes it is a vain and foolish proceeding.

(b) In dependent “ *is* ” sentences *ab* is *not* inserted after *gur* before a vowel :—1° When pred. is a vb. n. phrase :—*Oubart péin gur i coimeád anso ba ceart* (n. 251)—I myself advised that she should be kept here. 2° When pred. is a prep. pron.—*Már o ead gur orta*

*sán a bí si as féacaint*—As though she were looking at them. 3° When pred. is a prep. phrase :—*O' aomuigearar sur ar niam a bí a bürdeacás acu* (n.)—They admitted it was N. they had to thank for it (But see Ser. 52). 4° When pred. is an adverb :—*Ceapas láitreach sur annso a bí si* (S. 78)—I concluded at once that she was here. 5° Sometimes when pred. is an ordinary noun :—*ná bí gá leogaint ort sur amadán tu* (S. 77)—Don't pretend that you're a fool.

270.—The Substantive Verb.—(a) The vb. *is*, being a logical copula, can never connect a substantive (n. or pron.) and a mode of being, because what is denoted by a substantive can never be identified with a mode of its being. The vb. *is* can be used only :—1° To connect two substantives (n. and n.; n. and adj.; pron. and n.; n. and pron.) :—*Is ainnróe capatti*—a horse is an animal ; *Is maít bean deas-fir* (TBC.)—a good man's wife is good ; *Is tusa pé noear sán*—you are responsible for that ; *An tu sán ?*—Is that you ? etc. 2° To connect two modes :—*Is na seasam a bí sé*—it's standing he was. Here, “*na seasam*” is one mode (pred.), and “*a bí sé*”=the state in which he was, is another mode (subj.).

(b) *Tá*, on the other hand, being essentially a vb. denoting state or condition, can connect only a substantive and some mode of being :—1° *Tá sé ar an úrlár*—it's on the floor (Local). 2° *Tá si i gcruað-cás*—she's in difficulties (Extension of loc. usage). 3° *Bí liam ar aigne e deanam*—L. intended to do it (Mental condition—an extension of the local meaning).

(c) Where *tá* seems to connect two substantives, the second one is always modal :—1° *Tá sé pas beas fuan*—it's a trifle cold. I.e., it's cold, to the extent of a little bit. *pas beas* is A. of Extent in Degree. 2° *Tá sé iarractín as a meabair*—he's a bit crazy. *Tá* connects *sé* with the mode—as a *meabair*. *iarractín* qualifies the statement (A. of Extent in Degree). 3° *Bí pól tamall 'na gréasardé*—Paul was a cobbler for a time. *Tamall* is A. of Extent in Time.

(d) There is no pres. part. in I. The meaning is expressed by means of *tá+as+vb. n.* (active) ; or by

vo+a (G. pron.)+vb. n. (passive) :—1° Tátar aS dEanam  
gAc aon díct—One is doing one's best (active Auton.).  
2° Tá gAc aon díceall dA dEanam—every effort is being  
made (pass.).

(e) With the past part. tá expresses :—1° The completion of an act :—Tá an teitir criocnuigte aSám pE  
dEire—At last I have the letter finished. 2° The resultant state :—Ói na dOirse dUnta nuair a sroiseamair an  
halla—the doors were closed (i.e., we found them in  
that state) when we reached the hall. N.B.—The Irish  
Trade-Mark “ DÉANTA i n-EIRINN ” is hardly defensible.  
If is is understood, it is wrong, because the reference  
should be to the *act* of manufacturing, and emphatically  
to the *place*. “ I n-EIRINN do dEamead ” would do.  
Understanding tá things are even worse. “ Tá so dEanta  
i nEIRINN ” means either, “ this article has been just  
made in I.” or—“ it is in the state of having been made  
in I.” Neither of these conveys the right meaning.

(f) Immediate consecution of events is expressed by  
tá+tréis (v'eis)+vb. n.—Agus tú tréis a geallamaint  
go dtiocfa—Though you had just promised to come !

(g) With prep. in and G. pron. tá expresses :—  
1° Change—the contrast between what was and is ;  
what is and will be, etc.—Ói sé 'na trátnóna (Bn. 27)—  
evening had come ; Ni bia Eire 'na n-EIRINN (Hac. 95)—  
I. will no longer be I. 2° Actual Condition :—Ói an  
báisteach aS tuitim anuas 'na caisib—the rain was coming  
down in torrents ; Biodar aS teacht 'na dtáintib—they  
were arriving in crowds ; Siúd an filideacht aS rit tré  
m' aighe 'na caisi ceoil—Lo ! poetry runs through my  
mind in musical streams. An fad a bhrí fear aS fás  
i Dia 'na Dia—As long as grass grows and God is God !

(h) Further exx. of tá+in+G. pronoun :—1° Ói  
Caigula in' impire sa Róm (CMO. 253)—C. was Emperor  
in R. (Change). 2° Go raib 'na namard aS an impire  
(Ibid.)—that he was an enemy of the E. (Actual condition). 3° Dear sé na cormarta teinn dOib (CMO. 275)—  
It would be a “ sore sign ” for them (Actual condition).  
4° . . . na ceann so-peicse ar an Easlais (CMO. 278)—  
as visible Head of the Church (Change). 5° Uisce a  
bhrí na caise mór láróir (CMO. 302)—water that shall

be a big strong stream (Actual condition). 6° Tu *gá rád* go *brúilir ro' Dé* (CMO. 334)—saying that you are God ! (Actual condition). 7° . . . . *Bí sé pásta suas 'na tairb* (TBC. 11)—he had grown up to be a bull (Change). 8° *Bí ainm Conchubair 'na taca nírt* (TBC. 88)—C.'s name was a powerful support (Actual condition—with a hint of change). 9° *Caspar go deo* (=beró sé *go deo*) *m-a asacán linn e* (TBC. 141)—it will be cast up to us as an eternal reproach (Actual condition). 10° *An croré so tá 'na carraig le cruadas* (CCU. 167)—this heart as hard as a rock (Actual condition).

These exx. show that in this construction *tá* does not always imply change.

(i) **MAR A BEAO** :—1° *I dtreo . . . . so bpreacád an catair mar a beao coill* (CMO. 295)—so that the city looked as though it were a wood. 2° *Oo conaig sé mar a beao éan* (S.)—he saw what looked like a bird. 3° *Tá mar a beao ciatl daonna aige* (TBC. 11)—he has almost human intelligence. 4° *Bioð na daoine go léir mar a verois as a meabair le buite atais* (CMO. 332)—The people were all out of their minds, as it were, with joyous abandon.

(j) Note the following uses with the prep. *ar* :—1° *Tá sé ar an bpear is giorra do'n easbog* (bn.)—he is next to the Bishop. 2° *Bí triotáir o' Eoin pém ar Óume acu* (Mac. 8)—one of them was a brother of John himself. 3° *B'férdir go mbeao sé air ag Cú Culainn an radaarc o' fulans* (TBC. 176)—Maybe it would take C.C. all his time to support the sight.

(k) *Tá . . . . te* means :—1° am with, on the side of. 2° advise, counsel, discuss with. 3° in temporal clauses *tá . . . . te* denotes a pres. perf., *bí . . . . te* a pluperf.:—1° *An té ná fuil liom tá sé am' comhíb* (CS.)—He that is not with Me is against Me. 2° *Ni haon mait beit teat*—there's no use talking to you. 3° *péac, táim ag teact annso te trí blianaib* (CMO. 329)—Behold, I have been coming here for three years ; *Biodar ann te mi*—they had been there for a month.

**271.—Introductory *tá* :—(a)** *Tá daoine ann, ⁊ is mó acu eolas do crumhíu ná beata mait do caitream* (Im.)—

some people make it more their study to know than to live well. (b) *Tá daoine ann, γ i le neart uabair do déan-*  
*párois trossaod ón mbiaod go bás* (Im.)—Some people, out  
of sheer pride, would fast from food till death. (c) *má*  
*tá gurb é an ríg do beir párdún a anma do'n draige* (es. 78)—Although the king pardons the culprit. (d) *má*  
*tá gur bean curu o'á aniarasma ria* (TBB. 89)—Even  
though some of its evil consequences affected her. (e)  
*Tá a lán daoine γ is i a vtoit rém a bionn uata* (Im.)—  
many people seek their own way. (f) *Tá daoine, γ ba*  
*mait leo Dia do sásam* (Ser. 147)—Some people would  
like to satisfy God.

### Other Verbs.

272.—(a) The verb usually precedes its subj.—*ta ráib sé ag déanam brós* (S. 7)—one day as he was making  
shoes. (b) There are several exceptions to this rule :—  
1. Considerations of clearness and harmony, etc., may  
interfere with the normal order (VS+ complement of  
pred.). See 314, D. 2. The subj. N. is often projected  
(168). 3. A relative subj. precedes its verb. (c) Interrog.  
pronouns and adjectives are *not* exceptions :—*Cia déin*  
*é sm?*—Who did that? *Cia* is *not* subj. to *déin*, but  
pred. to *is* understood. The subj. of *déin* is *a* (rel.  
understood). The subj. of *is* is—*an té a déin é*.

273—Number :—(a) The 3 sg. is often used with a  
pl. subj. :—*Cia aonair daoine is é mac an Duine* (CMO.  
277)—Who do people say the Son of Man is? (b) The  
pl. is used with a sg. subj. when it is a n. of multitude :—  
1. *Tánaðar an ceatrar*—the four came. 2. *nár déotsað*  
*at gac cránað coigcríce* (KP. 19)—that the brood of  
every foreign sow did not suck. (c) When, however, the  
multitude is conceived as acting as a single whole, the  
sg. is preferable :—*Oubairt an tseisear go raðois ann*  
*go fonnmar*—the six women said they would go willingly.  
(d) The sg. or pl. is used with a dual subj.—*Déanfarð an*  
*ta teabair so mo gnó*—these two books will do me. (e)  
The analytic form of the vb., i.e., the 3 sg. along with  
sib, is used in 2 pl. pres. impft., fut. and condit., and  
pres. and past Subj.—1. *Téigéann sib a baile gac orðce*—

You go home every night. 2. Cao na taoibh ná filleadh sibh?—Why didn't you return (habitually)? 3. Molfaró sibh i—you'll praise her. 4. Oo cámfeadh sibh i—you would have blamed her. 5. So uisceisgíodh sibh slán a báile—Safe home. 6. Óa mbuaileadh sibh umam—if I had met you. (f) A sg. vb. is used with a rel. subj. even when the latter is pl. in meaning:—Tá leat pé leabhair atá uait—take whatever books you want. (g) When the rel. is A. or D. (temporal, modal, local or instrumental) a pl. vb. may of course be used with a pl. subj.—1. ná neite a dhéanró siad—the things they do. 2. Nuair a dhéanró siad a leictéirí—when they do such things. 3. Ba doicí leat ar an scuma 'n-a bhfuilte—you would think, by the way they are. . . . 4. Cia' cu toir no tiar atáid—whether they are in the East or West. 5. Pé' cu te scim nó te cláideam a marbhúiseasdar e—whether it was with knife or sword they slew him. (g) The 3 sg. is the only form in use, in modern I., in the ordinary pass. or auton. paradigms. The extant forms of the vb. is (in all moods and tenses) are 3 sg.

**274.—Tense.**—(a) The pres. habitual is used with má in a fut. sense. The fut. may be used if there is distinct reference to one particular occasion. Molfaró sibh i má beró an moladh tuilleadh aici—You'll praise her of (on that particular occasion) she shall have deserved it. (b) The simple past tense has often the force of a pluperf.:—Bí catlaoir shúgáim aige do dhéan sé féin do dhéan (S. 6)—he had a "soogawn" chair which he had made for himself. (c) In temporal clauses with te, the pres. is a pres. perf. and the past a pluperf. in force:—So raibh sean-aitne ag an annspríodh ortha te fada ó aimsir (CMO. 95)—That the evil Spirit had known them for ever so long. (See 270, k).

**275.—Mood:**—(a) The Imperative is sometimes interjectional and sometimes conjunctional in value:—Abair e—True! You may say so. Hear, hear! Féach—Look here (even when said to several). Cuir i scás go—Even if. Abair dhéan go—Even though. (b) The imper. signifies the act or event which one commands to take

place. It is changed into the vb. n. when it becomes dependent :—1° *Cáin isteac*—Come in. But—*Abaireis teact isteac*—Tell him to come in. 2° In such a case prohibitions are expressed by *gán* before the vb. n. or vb. n. phrase—*ná vein guro*—Thou shalt not steal. But—*Tá orouigte dímn gán guro a déanam*—We are forbidden to steal.

**276 (a)**—The Indicative, being the mood of fact, expresses pres. or past facts; or future ones, not conceived as mere contingencies. The sentence may of course be negative. Or the fact may be referred to conditionally, but even then it is assumed to be a fact, past, present or future :—1. *Oo tánatas sam' iarrard mar baincéile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to seek me in marriage. 2. *Má geibheann si lom ar Concubár, bero támte bó go tuis o Cúise uiaó agam* (TBC. 6)—If she gets a chance at C . . . . I shall have . . . . (b) In the apodosis of a condit. sentence the Indic. is sometimes used for the Condit., to express the certainty of the result :—*Muna mbeaó tusa, oo bios marb acu*—Had it not been for you, they would certainly have killed me.

**277.**—The Conditional partakes of the nature of a mood as well as a tense. (a) As a tense it is a secondary fut., *i.e.*, it represents the simple fut. when dependent on, or brought into connection with the past. *Oubairt sé inoé go tciocfaidh sé inoiu*—he said yesterday he would come to-day (This represents the direct statement—*tciocfaidh imbháireac*). The simple fut. is used after the pres. or the fut.—*Oeir sé (oéarfaró sé) go tciocfaró sé*—He says (will say) that he'll come. *Sé ruo a ceapas ná go rağaró sí i laige*—I really thought she would faint. (This represents the direct thought—*raigaró sí i laige*). (b) In rhetorical questions like the following, where it is virtually equivalent to a past indic., the “tense” value is uppermost :—1. *Cao a cífimn ós mo cónmair amach ac an gallán!* (S.)—What should I see in front of me but a pillar-stone! (More vivid than *oo connac*). 2. *Cé cífrois ag teact cun an dorais ac Séadna* (S. 89)—(A vivid way of saying *oo connacadar* . . .

Or, equally vivid :—*b' é túme connacadar . . . ac S !).* (c) The condit. occurs sometimes where English has the past tense.—*Ac ni déanfainn rúd ort*—But I didn't do as you wished. Much stronger than *níor déimeas*, which simply express the fact ; whereas the condit. embraces the whole mental atmosphere that engendered the fact. Here the modal, not the tense value is uppermost. It is, in fact, a conditional sentence, with the protasis suppressed. The condit. may often have any one of three tense values :—1. *ni féarófainn a innsint túit*—I couldn't tell you (now, or habitually). 2. I couldn't have told you. 3. I couldn't tell you (in the fut.). The past Subj. with *tá* has also these three tense values.

**278.—The Subjunctive** is the mood of Idea. Hence it is used :—(a) As an Optative (an idea to be realised) :—1. *Go bróiridh Dia ort*—God help you. (2) *Go mbuaanuigíodh Dia tu*—Long life ! 3. *Kurab amláidh túit*—The same to you. 4. *Nár cùitigtear do saotar leat*—May your efforts not be rewarded. 5. *Nár feicró mé an doilseas céadna i súilib aon mhná eile aris coróige* (Smb. 91)—May I never again see the same grief in the eyes of any woman. (b) To express indefinite time :—The action or event is viewed as a pure contingency :—1. *Ná labair cun go labartar leat*—Don't speak until you're spoken to (if that happens). 2. *Sár a ndoruoeadh níos síos ó aimsir an Coláistí* (ms. 108)—Before I farther depart from my College days. (The departure is still vague). (c) As a final Subj. (to denote the idea aimed at) :—1. *Go scuiridh sé bára a théire i n-uisge* (CMO. 334)—That he may dip the tip of his finger in water. 2. *Sáibh ná n-eic dúinn, a Laois, go teanam iad* (TBC. 66)—Yoke us the horses, L., that we may follow them. (d) With *tá* (of an unreal condition) :—1. *Tá nreanti i oícheire γ i Sióón na mírbuiltí a déimeadh ionaibh-se is rao ó a bheadh aitriúise déanta acu* (CMO. 315)—If in T. and S. had been wrought the miracles that have been wrought in you, they would long since have done penance. 2. *Tá mba fear omnae meaglae a bheadh póstá agam ní oírpimis tá céile* (TBC 3)—Had I married a fearsome timorous husband, we

should not have suited each other. (e) With *muna* (to express uncertainty or indefiniteness) :—1. *Muna n-ictró sib feoil Mic an Dhuine, γ muna n-ólard sib a cura folá, ni berd beata agairb ionairb* (CMO. 262)—Unless ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye shall not have life in you. 2. *Muna n-éistriú sé leat, tabhair leat duine nó beirt eile* (CMO. 292)—If he listens not, bring with you one or two others.

### Syntax of Conditional Sentences.

**279.**—In actual pres. suppositions with *má*, the apodosis may be :—1. Pres. indic. 2. Impft. 3. Past. 4. Fut. 5. Condit. 6. Imper. 7. Optative Subj.—*má tá sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá an tá agamh*, we win. 2. *Bíod sé ann anuairid teis*—he used to be there last year too. 3. *Bí dearman orm*—I was wrong. 4. *Berd an sgeal go maic*—things will be all right. 5. *Bead se comtaobrtac e déanam*—it would be dangerous to do it. 6. *Lábraod sé*—let him speak. 7. *Nára' maic agat-sa*—no thanks to you !

**280.**—In past supposition with *má*, the apodosis may be the same :—*Má bi sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá buairtete agamh air*—we've beaten him. 2. *Bíod sé ann anuairid, teis*. 3. *O'airis sé an sgeal go téir*—he heard the whole story. 4. *Tabhradar sé fiaonnaise*—he'll give evidence. 5. *B'fearra dúinn glaoðaċ isteac air*—we'd better call him in. 6. *Bíod sé m' finnē agamh anois*—let's have him as a witness now. 7. *Conāc san air!*—more power to him !

**281.**—In hab. pres. suppositions, the apodosis may take similar forms :—*Má téigean sé a baile gac orde* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá dearman orm sa*—I'm mistaken. 2. *Ni bionn puinn fáilte romis*—he's not very welcome. 3. *Bíod dearman ar Tadg*—T. was mistaken. 4. *B'otc uaitse gan é innsint dúinn*—you might have told us. 5. *Berd eactra i dtig airte anoch*—there will be tales in a certain house to-night. 6. *Bead sé cóm maic agamh eirige as*—we might as well give it up. 7. *Abair leis*

teact isteac anois—tell him to come in now. 8. So mairidh sé céad—may he live a century !

282.—In habitual pres. (=fut.) and fut. suppositions with *má* :—*má* bualleann sé (*bualfro sé*) umat :—  
 1. *ni gearanta duit*—you needn't complain. 3. *Ói dearmad ar duine éigin*—someone was wrong. 4. *féadfaro sib é sochrú*—you'll be able to settle it. 5. *Óeasó sé cóm mait agat labairt leis*—you might as well speak to him. 6. *Abair leis teact i mbáireac*—tell him to come to-morrow. 7. *So maicidh Dia do é*—God forgive him !

283.—With *má* and the Imperfect :—*má* bido sé ann gac oróce :—1. *ni tuigim-se é*—I don't understand it. 2. *Do cíteá-sa é*—you were wont to see him. 3. *Ói sé ann an oróce úo*—he was there that night. 4. *Cia déarfaro ná go mberó sé ann anocé ?*—Who'll say he won't be there to-night ? 5. *Do beasó sé ann anocé*—he'd be here to-night. 6. *ná h-innis d'aoinne é*—don't tell anybody. 7. *So bpróiridh Dia air*—God help him !

284.—Conditional supposition with *má* :—*má* beasó sé oireamhac duit—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would) :—1. *Tá sé cóm mait agat é breit leat*—you may as well take it with you. 2. *Ói an ceart agam ó cianair*—I was right a while ago. 3. *féadfair e cabairt tar n-ais cùsam*—you can bring it back to me. 4. *Óeasó sé cóm mait agat e triail*—you might as well try it. 5. *Bido sé agat*—you may have it. 6. *So noéanair sé maiteas duit*—may it do you good.

285.—Suppositions with *óá* :—The apodosis may be :—  
 (a) The Conditional. (b) Sometimes suppressed, or virtually contained in the context. (c) The Past indic. for vividness :—

(a) *Óá noemeadó an uile duine agairb cion fir sa comrac, beasó an lá agaínn*—If every man of you would do a man's part in the combat we should be victorious (Fut. reference).

(b) 1° *Ó fág móricos a ráib aige ag aristreas óá*

mb' é pém a gaeobad báis ar dtúis (Lúc. 27)—M. left all his property to A. in case he predeceased him. The apodosis is merely hinted at. Expressed, it would be—  
 1° Otreo, tá mb' é pém . . . . so bfuigearó A. a ráib aige.  
 2° O'airis sé an gcaillamaint a tuig fosa do'n duine uasal, tá sgarad sé leis an sarbreas saoighaita (CMO. 364)—He heard the promise Jesus had given the young man if he would discard his worldly goods. Here the implied apodosis is :—(Tú gcaill sé do tá . . . .) so mbeadh sarbreas ar neamh aige (CMO. 363)—he would have riches in heaven. 3° Tá mb' é Seán Ceatag pém é (S.)—Even S.C.

(c) 1° Tá nglacad sé iad, b'i buaróte ag an Áiriseoir air (CMO. 93)—Had He accepted them, it meant triumph for the devil. 2. Tá mbeinn na cás brios cóm marb te h-Art (S.)—Had I been in his place I should surely have been as dead as a door-nail.

**286.—Auxiliary *deim*:**—Used to express insistence (in command or request); premeditation, deliberateness, a promise, etc. :—1° Téanfaró-sa é tóigáint suas (CMO. 261)—I will raise him up (Promise). 2° Téanfaró siad curu acu do marbu (CMO. 324)—They will actually kill some of them (Premeditation). 3° Téim-eadar an teampat do coisreacan (CMO. 332)—They proceeded to consecrate the Temple (Deliberate action). 4° Ao' iarraró go noéanfaró sé ceart a cur i bperöm vó (CMO. 358)—Seeking that he would see that her rights were secured. (Premeditation). 5° So noearnaró é pém do níse i bfuil riog (ff. Bk. I, 322)—till he should contrive to wash in a king's blood (Deliberateness). 6. Téimró é cóimhionad (Bn. 256)—See that ye fulfil it (Insistence in command). 7° Téim-se ar gcatana do troro (Bn. 823)—Go and fight our battles (Insistence in request).

**287.—Neutral *deim*:**—Used in a “quasi-passive” sense, meaning—“becomes, changes into” :—1° An cloch . . . . do rinne sílab mó ró (TBB. 3)—The stone became a huge mountain. 2° Téanfaró fairisineac de (CMO. 360)—He will become a Pharisee. 3° Téanfaró

bró tig' oisge d'ar scuro pola (TBC. 60)—Our blood will change into a mass of ice. 4° Bí si ag calcað i ag cruaðcaint go dtí sur ðem cloch ói (lúc. 7)—She stiffened and hardened, and finally changed into stone. 5° Do ðem tigini stinne de'n airgead (S.)—The money was transformed into little flat pebbles.

**288.—The Verb *deirim*:**—(a) This vb. and its vb. n. ráð are often used where English has “think” :—  
1° Dearfað tuine—One would think. 2° Ni deirim ná go bfuil an ceart agat—I’m inclined to think you’re right. 3° Bí iongna mo crorðe orm, a ráð go noéanfað sé é—I was amazed to think he would do it. (b) The part. abarta is stronger than ráðote :—Tá abarta agam go dtabarfað amac síb as an ngeais seo atá oraiib san Éigipt (Bn.)—I have said (and I mean to stand by it) that I will rescue you from this peril you are in, in Egypt.

**289.—Téigim.**—The simple form cuaro is often used for deagaird, deacard, especially when the meaning is metaphorical.—1° Dá mero a b'i an cion ar dtuis, sur cuaro ana-breis air le cúpla lá (TBC. 162)—Great though the affection was at first, that it had increased considerably the last couple of days. 2° Dubairt sí tiom sur cuas i gcotuigteact go seois ó anuirid—She told me I had grown very stout since last year.

Deagaird (deacard) is also used :—Agus féac go noeagaird sé de bean d'fagail a beadh tilis dó (fSA. 11)—And yet he failed to secure a wife who would be faithful

**290.—Impersonal Verbs:**—1° Bí eagáil air go scoiltreaoð air—He was afraid he would split. 2° Is é is oibricise go n-éireocaird eatorca—It’s very likely they’ll disagree. 3° Ba d'obair go gcailltreaoð ar a misneac—Her courage almost failed her. 4° Do cuaro dá scuro fiona—Their wine failed. 5° Raðard d'iot é ðéanam—You’ll fail to do it. 6° Do b'ris ar an bforóne agam—My patience became exhausted. 7° Do maoluis ar an noioigras, i do lasuis ar an noilse (Bn. 261)—The zeal waned, and the loyalty weakened. 8° Teip orta an

ceist do réorteáil (vn. 299)—They failed to solve the question. Cf.—189.

**291—The Autonomous Forms :**—(a) It has been said that *tátar buaile* is the pass. of the act. auton., *buailear*. This is wrong. *Tátar buaile* is an actual pres., whereas *buailear* is an habitual pres. The true pass. of *buailear* is *bitear buaile*—someone is (habitually) struck ; and even this represents the act as just completed, or else refers to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. form for “ someone is being struck (habitually). ” The essence of the auton. is that the subject is suppressed. Hence no word defining the sex or the number of the subject is permissible. *Bitear dá bualaod* (b——, mb——) in the sense of “ someone (man, woman, or several people) is being struck ” is impossible as a pass.-auton. It says too much about the subject. *Bitear dá bualaod* is an act. auton. form, and can mean only—“ someone is habitually striking him (it). ” *Bitear buaile* is pass.-auton., but with the restrictions noted above.

(b) The following pass.-auton. forms are found. The corresponding active-auton. forms are given in the first column :—

Active-Autonomous	Passive-Autonomous
1° Pres. indic. actual :—	
<i>Tátar as bualaod</i> —some- one is now striking.	<i>Tátar buaile</i> —someone is now just—struck.
(Or <i>tátar buaile</i> may refer to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. for “ someone is now being struck.” That requires the purely pass. form “ <i>tá tuine éigin dá bualaod</i> . ” See (a) above).	
2° Present Habitual :—	
(a) <i>Buailear</i> —someone strikes.	(a) <i>Bitear buaile</i> . (But see (a) above).
(b) <i>Bitear as bualaod</i> —some- one is striking (contem- poraneous).	(b) Wanting. See 292.

## 3° Past Indicative :—

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| (a) <i>Oo buaileabó</i> —someone struck.               | (a) <i>Bíteas buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Oo bíteas ag bualaðó</i> —someone was striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                     |

## 4° Future Indicative :—

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| (a) <i>Buailefar</i> —someone will strike.              | (a) <i>Beifar buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Beifar ag bualaðó</i> —someone will be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                     |

## 5° Conditional :—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (a) <i>Oo buailefi</i> —someone would strike.              | (a) <i>Beifi buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Oo beifi ag bualaðó</i> —someone would be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                    |

## 6° Imperfect Indicative :—

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| (a) <i>Oo buaileti</i> —someone used to strike.             | (a) <i>Biti buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Oo biti ag bualaðó</i> —someone used to be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                   |

## 7° Imperative :—

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| (a) <i>Buailear</i> —let someone strike.               | (a) <i>Bítear buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Bítear ag bualaðó</i> —let someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                     |

## 8° Present Subjunctive :—

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| (a) <i>So mbuailear</i> —may someone strike.              | (a) <i>So ræðtar buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>So ræðtar ag bualaðó</i> —may someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                        |

## 9° Past Subjunctive :—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (a) <i>Øð mbuaileti</i> —if someone were to strike.        | (a) <i>Øð mbeifi buailete</i> . See (a) 291. |
| (b) <i>Øð mbeifi ag bualaðó</i> —if someone were striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292.                        |

**292.**—1° The remarks on *buailte* in 291 (a) apply to all the pass.-auton. forms given above. The (b) forms are wanting in all the moods and tenses in the pass.-auton. paradigm. In the fut., e.g., there is no such form for “someone will be being struck.” *Beir* *duine* *éigim* *tá* *bualaod* is a non-auton. pass. *Beifar* *as* *bualaod* *duine* *éigim*, is active-autonomous.

2° (a) It is, therefore, wrong to say (as has been said) that the Auton. has a complete Pass. of its own. (b) It is wrong to say that the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used with it. In “*buailtear é*” *é* is not disjunctive. It is A. governed by *buailtear*, just as in “*buail é*” it is A. governed by *buail*. (c) The forms *buailtear*, *bualead*, *buailfar*, *buailfi*, *buailti*, may be either pass. or auton. This is clear not only from old and mid. I., but also from mod. I. Keating often uses such forms in a pass. sense :—1. *Márbaod leis é* (ff. Bk. I, 42)—he was slain by him. 2. *Ollmuigtear long leis* (*Ibid.* 52)—a ship is equipped by him. K., in fact was inordinately fond of the passive. This, however, cannot disprove the fact that there is an Autonomous in mod. I. The *tá*-forms are conclusive proof of this; and those of other intrans. verbs (e.g., *siúbaltar*), though they might be explained as impersonal passives, are certainly autonomous in the minds of many speakers and writers of Irish.

3° The initial consonant of auton. (or pass.) forms often resists aspiration :—(a) *Ní róca go rabhadar i bprao sa catar sar ar piapruigsead* *tioib* *cé'rb'* *as iad* (CMO. 57)—Probably they hadn't been long in the city before they were asked where they were from. (b) *Too tánatas 'sam' iarraro mar bain-céile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to ask me in marriage.

### 293.—Special uses of the Participle :—

A.—The Participle of Necessity :—In O.I. this was distinct from the ordinary participle. In mod. I. they have become confused :—1° *Ní gearanta duit*—You need not complain. 2° *Ní beitte duit ann*—You should not be there. 3° *Ní h-ormsa is tógra san*—I am not to be blamed for that. 4° *As so an clann is clann dárrib*;

Riu so is sinte sūs do cios (H.A.I.C. p. 91)—Here are the genuine children—to them you should offer the milk of your breasts. 5° Creiote gniom roim caint is cairt (*Ibid.*)—Deeds are to be credited, in preference to words and paper.

B.—Forms with prefix ion, -m :—(a) 1° An riagair buð meanta (O.B. 56)—The rule that should be followed. 2° Móran do neitib inscriobta uirti (*Ibid.* 94)—Many things that ought to be written about her. 3° As so is iontuigte (P.P. Bk. I, 58)—From this it is to be inferred. 4° Is inmeasta (*Ibid.* 64)—It is probable. (b) Those like infeadma—fit for action :—1° ionairm (*Ibid.*)—able to bear arms. As airm looked like a G. (which of course it is not) such forms may have given rise to infeadma, etc.

2° Ni ionraio (*Ibid.* 146.)—It is not to be said. 3° É fém do ceangal re baint ionaistir (TBC. 287)—To gird himself to be fit for a journey.

## CHAPTER VI.

### SYNTAX OF ADVERBS.

294.—Note the following :—

1. An saoġal atá suas inóiu—the times that are in existence now.
2. Óíodar annsúd anuas ar a éuro tailim (Bn.)—There they were—planted on his land !
3. Suas (better tuas)—South (Art Bennett) :—Is árd an céim do beir Seán Ó Dálaigh Do ollam 's do báro na tire suas (C.C.U. 160)—High degree giveth S. O'D. to the learned bards of the South.
4. Tair anios—come up (from below) ; tair anuas—come down (from above) ; tair (téanam) suas—come up (when the speaker is coming up also).
5. Raġao-sa anonn annso (with emphasis on anonn)—I'll go aside here.
6. Roir still survives in Rathlin I. in the meaning of “at all.”—An roig tú aноct, nō an roig tú amárac ? Nō muna roig tú roir, is truaḡ atá mé (C.C.U. 102)—Will you come to-night, or will you come to-morrow ? Or, if you come not at all, my state is to be pitied !
7. Is roeo go mbeao neart na namao roigte amuic is amac (Bn. 254)—So that the enemies' strength should be utterly exhausted.
8. Ói an muinnitir ós as éirge suas, ⁊ an muinnitir a bi suas as oul i n-aois (Bn. 256)—The young people were growing up, and those who were grown up were getting old.
9. In coisgróis is lá inóiu—this day fortnight (in the past), is=gus an—lit., a fortnight until to-day ; (gus=go+initial s- of article).
10. In cā=where ? we seem to have the interrog. pron. cā+an (the prep. (?) found in aniar, etc.) suffixed.

The natural meaning is, therefore, " whence," but the word is used also meaning " where " and " whither."

11. When the idea of motion towards is involved, even though the verb is not one of motion, *issteac* and *amac* are used :—*Cóm luat is bídár issteac inni do stao an gaoct* (CMO. 258)—As soon as they had entered the boat the wind fell.

295.—In—*pé sgeal é*, at any rate, etc., *pé* is supposed to stand for *gró bē*, where *bē* is pres. subj. of *tá*. This is possible in—*pé tuime a bérō ann*—whoever will be there—*lit.* though there be a person who will be there. But in—*pé sgeal é*, *pé nē réim*, etc., where clearly we have to deal with the copula, it seems better to make *pé* (*bē*)=*b'ē*, *i.e.*, the pres. Subj. of the copula+*e*. Thus :—*pé sgeal é=gró b'ē an sgeal (a is) e*—though the state of affairs be this. There seems to have been confusion between the copula and the substantive vb. here. Note that *e* in *pé* does not change for gender or number. This is due to *pé<be=pres. Subj. of tá*.

296.—Expression of the Date :—Supposing to-day is Wed., July 14th, note the following way of referring to fut. and past dates :—

1° Fut.—

The 21st July will be :—*seachtain ó mòiu*.

„ 22nd „ „ :	„ „ „, <i>imbáireac</i> .
„ 23rd „ „ :	„ „ „, <i>ón Aoine seo cùsgainn</i> .
„ 16th „ „ :	<i>umanoirtear</i> ( <i>arbhú</i> , <i>arú</i> , <i>actrú</i> <i>imbáireac</i> ).
„ 17th „ „ :	<i>Oíche Satairn seo cùsgainn</i> .
„ 28th „ „ :	<i>Coisfriðis ó mòiu</i> .
„ 29th „ „ :	„ „ „, <i>imbáireac</i> .
„ 30th „ „ :	„ „ „, <i>ón Aoine seo cùsgainn</i> .
„ 24th „ „ :	<i>seachtain ón Satairn so cùsgainn</i> .
„ 4th Aug. „ „ :	<i>trí seachtaine ó mòiu</i> .
„ 11th „ „ :	<i>ceathair</i> „ „ „,
„ 5th „ „ :	<i>trí</i> „ „ „, <i>imbáireac</i> .
„ 6th „ „ :	„ „ „, <i>ón Aoine seo cùsgainn</i> .

**2° Past.**—



**297.**—All these expressions (296) are adverbial. *Seachtain* (*coisctíos* (-oëas), etc.) ò—are used only with *mónu* and *imbáireac*—not with *móé*, *árdbú móé*, or *umanoirtear*. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week. So, *seachtain* (*coisctíos*, etc.) is *lá*—are to be used only with *mónu*, *móé*—not with *árdbú móé*, nor *imbáireac*, nor *umanoirtear*. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week.

298.—Whenever the day in question can be designated (adverbially) by *mōiu*, *mōé*, *imbáireac*, *actrú mōé*, *umanoirtear* (*actrú imbáireac*) these are the forms to be used—not *Óia Luain*, etc.

## CHAPTER VII.

### SYNTAX OF CONJUNCTIONS.

299 (a)—The conj. **agus** is connected with the adj. **ogus**, in **fogus**, near. Hence it is used to connect two events which happen simultaneously, or close to each other in time :—  
1° *Is léir ón gcaimint go raibh aigne ná maigseomne ⁊ i ag ráð na bprocal* (CMO. 30)—It is clear from what she said that the Virgin's mind as she said the words. . . . 2° *Ói móran áðbair macánam ag an Slánuigsteoir ⁊ é 'na súrde annsúr* (CMO. 138)—The Saviour had much food for reflection as He sat there.  
3° *Ói an t-áran briste ⁊ an t-iasc briste ag méadú i láim an Tígearna ⁊ é gá otabairt do sna deisgíobuil* (CMO. 256)—The pieces of bread and of fish were multiplying in the Lord's hand, as He gave them to the disciples.

(b) In neg. sentences **agus** is conjunctive, ná disjunctive :—**Agsus** :—1° *Ni raibh puinn saoigaltais ag lóachim ⁊ Anna* (CMO. 35)—J. and A. (taken together as one domestic establishment) had not much worldly wealth. 2° *Ni raibh cailín ar síloct Áðam ⁊ Éba dob' uaistíle os cómair Dé ná i* (CMO. 280-1)—There was no maid of the seed of A. and E. higher in God's sight than She. 3° *An té . . . . ná déanfaró meas crúinn roim ré ar an gcostas, ⁊ ar an áðbar ⁊ ar an eotus náró' fuláir abeit ag an luict oibre ⁊ ag na saoir* (CMO. 328)—He who would not calculate carefully beforehand the cost and the material and the knowledge that the masons and other workmen must have. . . . (All these items considered, not separately, but together). 4° *Ni n-eor dom aon tiaig is mó eotus ⁊ tuisgint ná é*—I know of no leech who combines more knowledge and intelligence than he does.

**ná** :—1° *Níl a cura ná a clú aige siur*—That fellow

has neither riches nor reputation. 2° *níl* so ná súo acu—They have neither the one thing nor the other. 3° *ni* dubart go noéanfaimn é ná ná deánfaimn—I neither said I would do it nor that I wouldn't.

(c) *ní* followed by *ná* gives a resultant affirmative :—  
1° *ni* deirim ná go bfuil an ceart agat—I'm inclined to think you're right. 2° *ni* deánfaimn ná gur deas-dúine é—I'm disposed to think he's a good fellow. 3° *ni* baoisgat ná gur tuig na Rómánais luac an tabartais sin (bn. 833)—One may be sure that the Romans realised the value of this gift.

(d) *ní . . . ná ní*.—This combination has a cumulative negative force :—1° *ni* raib eagsa Té air, ná *ni* raib beann ar duine aige (CMO. 358)—He hadn't the fear of God, no, nor care for man, either. 2° *ni* leogaró siad orta go bpreicre siad é, ná *ni* leigearann seisean air go bpreiceann sé iad (TBC. 149)—They don't pretend that they see him. No more does he pretend that he sees them.

(e) *ná ná . . . nō ná*.—In a negative clause, when the negative affects *nō*, the latter becomes *ná* :—*má* deintear tol an Tigearna is cuma an domhan cad eile a deintear ná ná deintear. Mara no deintear tol an T. cad é an tairbe aon nro eile a deintear nú ná deintear? (CMO. 319)—If one does the Lord's will, it matters not one whit what else one does or does not. If one does not do the Lord's will, what's the use of anything else he does or does not?

(f) The use of *má* with the Condit. should be noted :—*Cá* bfuil an cura a tabhradó bean teis i gcoinnib a toile? *má* tabhradó ní pior-cura é (TBC. 134)—Where is the knight who would bring a wife with him against her will? If he did, he's no true knight!

This assumes the supposition to be true.

(g) *nō* has often the meaning—"or else":—*ni* maist i' do ciatl, nō nior mūmis a gcealct go cruinn doo' teactairib (TBC. 17)—You haven't much sense, or else you didn't teach your messengers their lesson well!

(h) **MARA=MUNAB** :—1° *MARA* piú, ám, filipró bur siotcán oraib rém (CMO. 246)—If, however, it is not worthy (of it) your peace will return to yourselves,

2° **MARA** mait̄ tib̄ mise do c̄reideamhaint (CMO. 334)—If ye do not wish to believe Me. 3° In U.I. act̄ mar often=muna :—Is duine bocht suarac̄ mé act̄ mar b̄fáisid̄ mé tú mar sp̄ré (CCU. 100)—I'm a poor wretched fellow, if I do not get you to wed.

(i) **DÁ** mba=Even.—1° Dá mb'iað na deisḡiobuil p̄ém iað vi a v̄cuissint maol (CMO. 281)—Even the disciples' intelligence was clouded. 2° Dá mba as tráct̄ ar áilneact̄ p̄ém é, is breaḡta go mó̄r i ná Déirid̄e (TBC. 5)—Talking even of beauty she's fairer far than D. (Supply, as apodosis, something like—*to caitfimis so aomáil*).

(j) **DÁ** introduces an unreal supposition, so that words like puinn, which can be used only in a neg. or virtually neg. clause, may occur with it :—Dá mbeaoð sé ann, ⁊ eolas na h-áite m-a ráib̄ sé as puinn daoime, ní baoſal ná go b̄faḡaoð na riſte pagánaca san an t-eolas (Mac. 10)—If it (a supposed hidden treasure) had existed, and many people knew where it was, those pagan kings would certainly have had the knowledge of its whereabouts.

(k) The N. after ná, than :—As ná contains a petrified form of the rel. 3 sg. of tā (88c), the n. pron., phrase or clause following it may often be parsed as subj. N. to that verb :—1° Taoi-se i b̄faoð nios pearr ná mise—You are much better than I (am). 2° Tā sí nios veise ná mar is doic̄ leatsa—She's prettier than you think. But there is sometimes an alternative interpretation :—n̄il aoinne is pearr a tām̄is as ná mise—No one escaped better than I.—Here, we may supply after ná—mar a tām̄is (mise) as. Mise being subj. N. to tām̄is, and the whole clause mar . . . as, subj. N. after ná.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### SYNTAX OF PREPOSITIONS.

300.—**Partitive *de*** :—Occurs chiefly :—

1° After an adj. or n. of magnitude, multitude, intensity, description, etc. :—(a) *Sluas de òaoimh bocht na catrach* (CMO. 57)—Many of the poor of the city. (b) *Ón gceann teas de'n toc* (CMO. 254)—from the South end of the lake. (c) *Nád beag de phionós uirtí* (CMO. 305)—that it is sufficient punishment for her. (d) *Aon teas de shóis na firinne*—a single ray of the light of truth.

2° After proleptic *sé*, *so*, *san*, *a*; also after analeptic *san* :—

(a) *An mbeadh sé de misneac ag fosa an tsabbáth do shárú* (CMO. 336)—would Jesus have the courage to violate the Sabbath. (b) Sometimes proleptic *sé* is omitted :—*Ní raibh de òánaict ann a súile amain o'iompair suas cun na bflatas* (CMO. 359)—He was not bold enough to raise even his eyes to Heaven. (c) *Ná cuirimis san de masla ar ar ngléire go dtéidrimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. (d) *Bá mait an sgéal a beit de tiumaiste uirtí é gá pósad* (S. 112)—It would have been a good thing if she were so unfortunate as to have him marry her. (e) *Is beag duine a raibh sé de òánaerdeact ann cuairt tabairt ar a teac* (SmB. 15)—Few people were bold enough to visit her house. (f) *Ní raibh sé de misneac aige out isteach* (SmB. 147)—He hadn't the courage to go in.

3° After a neg. (including *san*) with *ac* :—

(a) *Ní biobh de clúdaic air ac seite fan cum air* (CMO. 81)—His only clothing was a hide around his waist. (b) *Aigus san de òaoimh innte ac cùis mille fear γ ceitre mille ban* (ff. Bk. I, 168)—Seeing that there were in it only 5,000 men and 4,000 women. (c) *Ní raibh de cairdibh*

as pól Dubh acht a gileas ceoil (SmB.)—P.D. had no friend but his instrument.

4° Before the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) An té is breasgáta o'á bpreacaró súil duine riám ar an saoighéal so (S. 61)—The finest person that human eye ever saw in this world. (b) Si bean is uaiste i o'á ráibh riám ann, ⁊ o'á mberó go deo ann—She's the noblest woman that ever was, or ever will be.

5° After the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) I ndíaird ar tuit o'uaistilb lochlannach leis (ff. II. 224)—Seeing he had slain so many Lochlannach nobles, (b) Tréis ar tugamair de grád ⁊ de cion ⁊ o'annsaict dá céile (TBC. 165)—After all the love and heartfelt attachment we had given each other.

6° After comparatives and superlatives :—

(a) Is pearrr de tárð é ná an fínnbeannach (TBC. 8)—He's a better bull than Whitehorn. (b) Ba measa de duine mé as teact dom (Im. 36)—I was a worse man on leaving them.

7° By a sort of inversion the noun of description follows *de* :—

Le comá de'n tsagás san (TBC. 94)—with this sort of condition. But we say—a leitéro de comá, not comá dá leitéro.

**301.—Defining *de* (vo)** :—(a) Is eol duit o chaintear doimhe m'feabhas-sa de rí, ⁊ a olcas san o'foglaerde (luc. 32)—From what people say you know how good a King I was, and how bad a robber he was. (b) Do bríg go raibh do ceangal aige ar an mbás, gan teact dá ionnsaige gan forfógra (TBB. 106)—Because he had bound Death not to come to him without forewarning him. (c) rug (sé) neamh do rogham (ff. II, 112)—Took Heaven as his choice.

**302.—Partitive as** :—(a) Cia'cu acu san is pearrr leat?—Which of these do you prefer? (b) Dá géire beirt agaínn tá dearmad déanta agaínn—Smart as the two of us are, we've made a mistake. (c) So—doimne, duine, ana-curo acu—Any, one, many of them. (d) Do leigis

sé an éuro acu a bhi i ngádó le teangeas (cm'd. 255)—He cured those of them that needed a cure.

**303.—Prepositional Phrases** :—These may be either :—

A. Substantival. B.—Adverbial. C.—Adjectival.—A. have been dealt with.

B.—1° Ói sé ar meisge—He was in a drunken state.  
2° Le neart buile agus aonairt sé an camnt—He said the words out of sheer mad folly.

C.—1° Bean gan riagail bean gan ciatl—A lawless woman is a senseless one. 2° Fear fé leit riám is eadé—He's altogether an original fellow. 3° Duine te Dia, is fearr leis bia d'na bean (UP.)—A man of God prefers food to a woman ! 4° As gach áird i gclian agus i gcomhgar (n. 120)—From every direction, far and near.

**304.—Meanings and Uses of the Simple Prepositions** :—

A.—Before nouns and pronouns :—

1° **Ar**.—Orig. meaning—before, for, because of.

(a) Modal :—Ar bogád—loose ; ar tarans—drawn (of a weapon) ; ar fánardeact aigne—distractedly ; ar soðar, trotting, etc.

(b) Local :—Ar muir, ar tir—on sea, on land ; ar tosach—in front ; ar deireadh—behind ; ar an saoðal eile—in the next world.

(c) Of the part affected. (An extension of the local meaning) :—Oo rug sé ar cluas air—he seized him by the ear ; ar an sgórnais—by the throat.

(d) Temporal :—Ar ball—presently ; ar a ro a cloig—at 2 o'clock ; ar teact a baile dúinn—when we arrived home.

(e) Pass. with vb. n.—Tá an Gaoilimh ar labairt annso—I. is spoken here ; ar fágáin—to be had.

(f) In respect of ; causal :—Ar feabhas a pearsan agus a mém (L.O.)—because of the excellence of his person and disposition.

(g) Of measurement :—Ar fad, ar leitead, ar doimneas, ar aonrae—in length, breadth, depth, height.

(h) Dependent upon :—Duine ar leat-súil—a one-eyed man ; tá sé ar beagán fágáiltais—he hasn't much to

live upon ; fear b̄ios ar aon c̄araid sa saōgat áluinn seo (Smb. 1)—A man who is dependent on one friend in this beautiful world.

(i) Of price paid :—An mór a t̄ugais ar an mbuim ?—How much did you give for the cow ? When the price is not mentioned or alluded to, as, not ar, is used.—T̄iolfaró sé as—He'll pay for it.

(j) Of feelings, burdens, etc. :—Tá atas, brón, easla orm—I'm glad, sorry, afraid, etc.

(k) Among :—Is ar do buailō-se do rugad é do h-oileadh e (TBC. 8)—It was among your cows he was born and bred.

(l) Duty or obligation :—Is ar rīchtib na Múman atá onóir na Múman do cosaint (TBC. 196)—It is incumbent on the M. kings to defend M.'s honour.

(m) N.B.—Bíod sé sin ar an té is lúsa ar fao (CMO. 290)—Let him be the least of all.

2° As :—(a) Local :—As so go nás na Riōs—From here to Nass. Cao as duit ?—Where are you from ?

(b) Temporal :—As so amach—from this on ; as a h-aicte sin—after that ; as an nua (or—as a nua)—anew, afresh.

(c) Modal :—As easar—disorderly ; as ionad—dislocated ; as a céite—asunder ; as seilb—evicted.

(d) Various :—As a ainn—by an abusive name. Do ḡlaoradh as a ainn air—he was called by an abusive name. Do ḡlaoradh as a ainn é—he was called by his own name.

(e) Cause, origin :—A feirs a deimeas é—I did it out of anger. Ni maoróte duit as—you needn't boast about it.

3° Cum :—(a) Local or temporal :—Béid si trí bliana déag cum na Bealtaine—She'll be thirteen next May. (b) An teice cum na h-Éigipte—The flight into E.

(b) End, purpose, result :—Rāgaró sé cum críce duit—It will turn out to your advantage. Cum go b̄feicfimn am' súilib cinn é—in order to see it with my own eyes.

4° Do :—(a) Possessive :—Finnbeannac is ainn do (TBC. 8)—Whitehorn is his name.

(b) Motion towards :—*Oo'n tobair*—to the well. Obsolescent, in this sense, in Munster—*go*, *go dtí*, *cum* and various prep. phrases taking its place.

(c) Final (denoting purpose) :—*oús* (<*oo fiúis*)—for the purpose of finding out ; *o'fheadamh*—to see. Now *fheadamh* (without prep.). *Ba mait liom an leabhar san oo téigeadh*—I should like to read that book (*oo téigeadh* denotes the purpose for which I should like the book).

(d) Of time :—*Oo (oe) síor*—always ; *oo ghnáth*—usually, etc.

(e) Causal :—*Oom' (oem')* *óeomh réin*—of my own free-will ; *o'ainmheomh oo dicitur*—in spite of your worst (best).

(f) Of the agent :—*Cao pé noeara túit é déanam?*—Why do you do it ? *Asg tabhairt an airgead ói óo* (S.)—as he gave her the money.

5° **De** :—(a) Motion from :—*Oo léimeas anuas oe'n capall*—I jumped off the horse ; *Oo túit sé siar oe'n catlaoir* (bn. 334)—he fell back off the chair.

(b) Partitive :—*Curo de sna h-uaisleib*—some of the nobles. (300).

(c) Cause, origin :—*Ciar' óiobh tu?*—From whom are you sprung ? *Oa bárr san*—as a result of that ; *oá deasgáibh sm* (of bad results).

(d) Temporal :—*Oe tó is o'oróce*—by day and night.

(e) Of the material (as distinct from the instrument) :—*Oo lionas an buroéal o'uisge*—I filled the bottle with water.

6° **in** :—(a) Local.—*Is tis sa tis atá sé*—it is in the house (D.) *oo cuairt sé isteach*—he went in (A.).

(b) Temporal.—*Is aon uair a' cluig amáin*—In a single hour.

(c) Modal.—*N-a cuis a taimis sé* (ms. 179)—He came on foot.

(d) End, purpose, result.—*Tiocfaidh an magadh na dárínibh do*—The joke will end seriously for him. *Ragaird sé i socar dúinn*—it will profit us.

(e) With *tul* :—*Asg tul i n-aois as tul i n-oicas*—Getting older, getting worse ; *tul i bfuaire*—getting colder.

7° **le** :—(a) Local (the radical meaning is “ by the side of ”) :—Cia táinig teo’ cois ?—Who came with you ? Leis an aill—Over the cliff.

(b) Temporal.—Le cùis bliadana déag o’ aimsir ní raibh pól Dubh ’sa berolin mite bealaig ó n-a céile—For 15 years P.D. and his violin had not been a mile apart.

(c) Cause.—Tágann mait te cárde—Good comes, if one waits for it.

(d) Instrumental.—Le scim do roimeadh é—It was done with a knife.

(e) Passive with trans. vb. n.—Tá so le ráð—This much is to be said.

(f) Purpose or futurity with intrans. vb. n.—An Slánuigteoir a bhi te ceact—The promised Saviour.

(g) With adj. denoting likeness and the contradictory :—Is cosmaíl le n’ atair é—He’s like his father.

(h) Ownership, subjectivity (with is).—Is mait liom tae, ac ní mait róim é ; is liomsa é sin.

(i) With vb. of speaking to, listening to :—Cum go labartar teat—until you’re spoken to ; Éist leis—Listen to him !

8° **ó** :—(a) Local separation :—Ó bláth clíat go Corcaig—From D. to C.

(b) Temporal separation :—Ó som i teit—From then till now.

(c) Agent :—Oo h-oirioniseadh ó Déa é—He was ordained of God.

(d) Cause, origin, motive :—Ó’n ionad dúnil in-airgeadh is eadó tágann an t-amhlás go minic—Moral decadence often results from avarice.

9° **mar**.—Chiefly in such phrases as :—mar gseall ar—because of ; mar bárr ar gac nroonas—to crown every calamity ; roimhe mar é—one like him ; mar an gceáonta—likewise.

10° **ós** :—In adv. and compound prep. phrases :—ós aro—aloud ; ós íseal—low, secretly ; ós cóimír—in the presence of ; ós cionn—above ; bun ós cionn—upside down.

**11° Fé :**—(a) Of motion :—Óo rug fosa an dáréas leis isteach fé'n dtir (CMO. 254)—Jesus brought the Twelve with Him into the country.

(b) Of Time :—fé marún—before morning ; fé latair—at present.

(c) Local :—fé luighe na gréime—under the Sun.

(d) Modal :—Toisc spiríodí a bheit fé nbur smaict (CMO. 316)—Because spirits are under your power. fé séan, sonas, brón, glas—prosperous, happy, sad, locked up.

(e) Partitive :—A cùis piúro féin gceao (MS. 167)—25%.

(f) Multiplicative :—fé do, fé tri, fé céao—twice, thrice, 100 times.

(g) Causal :—Cao pá 'n cruthuis Dia sinn ?—Why did God create us ?

**12° Fan :**—(a) Local :—1. Bí fosa ag siúbal an bótar ó deas fan aban lórhoam (CMO. 315)—Jesus was walking Southwards on the road alongside the Jordan. 2. Bí sé ag siúbal fan an bótair (CMO. 362)—He walked along the road.

(b) Temporal :—fan na haimsire—all the time ; fan lae—throughout the day.

**13° Um :**—(a) Temporal :—um Nochtair—about Xmas; um an dtaca san—by that time.

(b) Causal :—Uime sin—therefore ; cao uime—wherefore ?

(c) Local :—Cuir sé uime a cura éadair—he put on his clothes.

**14° So, to :**—(a) Motion towards :—Cao é an fáro é ó Béal feirste go bláth Cliat ?—How far is it from Belfast to Dublin ?

(b) Modal :—Óo cuadhais i gcotuitseact so mó—You've grown much stouter. so mó—lit.—to a great extent.

(c) Temporal :—Seachtain is (=su-san) lá moiu—this day week (in the past). Lit.—a week till to-day ; óo déanfarois trossaod so báis—they'd fast till death.

(d) For a special use in is sentences, see 268.

15° **ín** :—(a) Local :—*Tá* *na* *cád* *mile* *ín* *Corkais*  
i *béal* *at* *an* *Siortaró*—There are 40 miles between Cork and Ballingeary.

(b) Followed by *as*=including . . . and :—*ín* *máib* i *mion-daoine* (CS.)—including women and children.

16° **as** :—(a) Local :—*as* *seata* *na* *catraí* *is* *eao*  
*buailteoar* *umá* *céile*—They met at the city gate.

(b) Possession :—*Tá* *ó* *as* *abairín* *burde* *asam* (Song)—I have two little yellow goats.

(c) Partitive :—See 302.

(d) With vb. n. to express the pres. part.—*Tá* *sé* *as*  
*out* *a* *báit*—he is going home ; *Bi* *sé* *as* *déanam* *ar* *an*  
*orcis*—he was approaching the house.

17° **so**—with :—Rare in mod. prose. Found in the literature, especially poetry :—*So* *n-iomad* *seao* (L.O.)—with many precious stones. Common in composition. Also in *so teit* (with a half), and *so teor* (enough).

### 305.—B.—Prepositions after nouns and adjectives :—

(a) *Níor* *fás* *san* *ia* *do* *san* *beit* . . . . *so* *h-aña* *aireac*  
*orta* *fém* (Im. 86)—That did not prevent them from being very watchful over themselves. *Catáir* *atá* *teoranac* *le* *h-Asótus* (bn. 834)—A city on the borders of Asotus. *Bi* *aireac* *duit* *fém*—Be watchful in your own interests. *Tá* *aitne* *maic* *asam* *ort*—I know you well.

(b) *Cao* *is* *bríš* *leis* ?—What does it mean ? *Cao* *is* *ciall* *leis* ?—What's the sense of it ? *Cao* *is* *míniú* *leis* ?—What's the interpretation of it ? *Bi* *ó* *á* *bríš* *leis* *an*  
*bféite* *sim* (CMO. 294)—This Festival had two meanings. *Tá* *ciall* *as* *Méib*, *ac* *níl* *ciall* *teo'* *cáinnt-se* (TBC. 59)—M. has sense—your words have none.

(c) 1. *Bi* *an* *tobar* *ar* *a* *tuigtar* *tobar* *lácaib* *buailte*  
*teo* (CMO. 138)—The well, known as J.'s well, was near them. 2. *Níl* *sé* *oireannac* *do* *Ríseact* *Dé* (CMO. 297)—He's not fit for the Kingdom of God. 3. *San* *bac* *le* *out*  
*cóm* *para* *le* *deoc* *a* *ó* *iarraro* *uirti* (CMO. 140)—Not to mention going so far as to ask her for a drink. 4. *Ná* *bi*  
*ro-tugta* *do*' *coit* *fém* (Im. 40)—Be not over-fond of your own will : *tugtaict* *do'n* *peaca*. (Im. 45)—proneness

to vice. 5. *Bíod grád agaibh da céile*—love one another : *tá fhuat ag an mbeirt da céile*—the two hate each other. 6. *Ói sé ró-tugsta cun na díosbhála déanam, γ b' i an ionad dún san airgead aige, γ san onóir* (bn. 86)—He was too much given to injustice, and too fond of money and honour. 7. *Tá ag dul dem' misneac p' deire* (TBC. 149)—My courage is at last beginning to fail me. 8. *Tá sac aoinne burðeac oe*—he's very popular.

(d) 1. *O'iaras p'ém cead ar Ádóes beit ón mbád aon lá amáin* (Lúc. 47)—I also asked leave of Hades to absent myself from the boat for one day. 2. *Ciúin ó feirs γ ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Free from anger and from worry. 3. *Is gearr ó brise ríair brise cata* (TBC. 68)—Defeat in battle is not far from breach of discipline. 4. *Is dall ó Méib a ceapadh go nglacfaidh n-aonfeacht iad* (TBC. 88)—It is shortsighted of M. to suppose that both would be tolerated. 5. *Táid siad ag baint ód' neart* (TBC. 150)—They are sapping your strength. 6. *Tá an áit pollam ó d'aoine te fada*—The place is long since uninhabited.

(e) 1. *Ní maoróte túit as*—You've no reason to boast of it. 2. *A beit orm doil, leis, as na mairb* (Lúc. 41)—That I should have to pay for the dead as well ! 3. *Níl aon ionntaoibh agat asam*—You don't trust me. 4. *Bíod do mhumisim a Dia na glóire*—Put your trust in Almighty God.

(f) 1. *Nior fán beann acu ar anam ná ar beata ná ar saoġat* (TBC. 127)—They no longer cared aught for life or livelihood or living. 2. *Níl aon breit agam air*—It is quite impossible for me. 3. *Is báirdeamail te n-a céile tuict aon-céirroe*—Same “trade,” same “tirade.” 4. *Ní raib aon caoi aige ar é déanam*—He had no chance of doing it. 5. *p' deire beirò ar an ngnó, tá deire te camnt Saobh* (S.)—Whatever the upshot of this affair, there's an end to S.'s talk. 6. *Níl aon fagáil agat air*—You'll never secure it. 7. *Tá sé cón greamuisce sm ar Dia na glóire ná cuireann sé aon tsuim i neitib saoġalta* (Im.)—He is so grappled to Almighty God, that he pays no attention to worldly ways. 8. *Oein iarract air*—Have a try at it. 9. *Ói sé lán-ullam ar é déanam*—He

was quite ready to do it. 10. Tá sé oireamhnaidh go maith air—He's quite capable of (doing) it. 11. Tá sé socair ar bheit na sagart—He's determined to become a priest. 12. Mo seasamh inóiu orraibh (n.)—On you I rely to-day. 13. Béarla toradh ar a shaotar san—Such a man's labour will not be in vain. 14. Ófuit aon taithise agat ar an nGaothuinn a labairt?—Have you any practice in speaking I.? 15. Ni raibh uamh aici ar a chuireann a rá—She hadn't time to say any more. 16. Níl aitne (cion, meas, gráin, greim, neart) agam air—I don't know (love, esteem, hate) him ; I have no hold on him ; I cannot help it.

(g) 1. Ni fheadar an imberis comh tugta cun cogaird do déanam (TBC. 61)—I wonder would they be so inclined to make war. 2. Tugtaict cun géilleadh do'uaictaran (Im. 47)—A ready obedience. 3. Agus do toiligh Simón cuige sin go fonnmar (Bn. 836)—And S. consented to this willingly. 4. Do tugadh fé neara nár féac sé riam cun a tairbe réims (Bn. 843)—It was observed that he never sought his own advantage.

### 306.—Prepositions after verbs :—

(a) 1. Aitishim ar—I convince, argue down one's throat :—Ó'aitheocad si ort gur ar meisge bi sé—She would have you believe he was drunk. 2. San bac do mhaibh é mion-daoine (CS.)—Not counting women and children. Ni bacfaid leis—I shan't mind it. 3. Ni liomsa a baineann an cainnt sin—Those words don't refer to me. Óam an méid sin an móraith díobh (CMO. 366)—This took the pride out of them. An firinne . . . do baint aisti (CMO. 260)—To take the truth out of it ; Cao do bainm duit?—What happened to you? San curteis ná baint uairidh—Without adding to or taking from it.

(b) 1. Dearfar ort—you'll be caught. 2. Deir bean-nacht óm' cróide go tir na hÉireann. . . . Cum a maireann de siolradh fir is Éibir (Donnc. Ruad)—Bring a blessing from my heart to the land of E. to all that are alive of the seed of Ir. and Eibhear. 3. Deir leat luac cùis punt—Bring with you £5 worth.

(c) 1. Biadar ag cosc na leanbh ar teacht cuige (CMO.

362)—They were preventing the children from coming to Him. 2. *ná caillidh orainn*—Don't fail us. 3. *Do caill ar a misneac airis*—Her courage failed again. 4. *Níor cosam an ciúnas iad ar an asaċán san* (CMO. 336)—Silence did not save them from this reproach.

(d) 1. *Cailfar a lán aingír leo san*—much money will be spent in vain on them. 2. *Do caiteadh clocha leo*—stones were thrown at them. 3. *ná caítear an róimh aimsire le neitibh saoġatċa*—don't spend too much time on worldly things. 4. *Cia hé aoeirir do casad leat* (also *ort*)?—Whom do you say you met? 5. *Ni vuitse is cóir é casad liom* (S.)—It isn't you who should cast it up to me. 6. *Ag casad leis an roħa tráig a tabairt leis* (TBC. 76)—trying to serve the two strands. 7. *Ja casad m' asaċán le h-fosa* (CMO. 340)—upbraiding Jesus for . . . .

(e) 1. *Do cimmeado ar cōmairle*—a plan was settled on. 2. *Do cinn air e leagad*—he failed to knock it down. 3. *Sur cinn ar minnib a cōm-aimsire i ssgéim* (K.)—until she surpassed in beauty all her contemporaries.

(f) 1. *Ni cuirfió sé suas lib* (bn. 259)—He will not put up with you. 2. *Cuir sios ar*—talk about, describe. 3. *Cuir suas ve*—give up. 4. *'Sé cūis a cuirfinn sios leis*—The reason I should assign for it is . . . . 5. *Cuir suas cum*—instigate to. 6. *Cuir cum*—attempt to. 7. *Cuir le*—send with, add to, apprentice; *do cuireado te céird e*—he was apprenticed to a trade. 8. *Cuir flos ar*—send for. 9. *Cuir fé*—settle down. 10. *Cuireadar burdean luċċ airm uata* (CMO. 301-2)—They dispatched an armed band. 11. *Cuir ve*—get over (work, disease, trouble, etc.); cover space. 12. *Cuir vioċi*—be off; undress. 13. *Bi sé ag cur ve ar a viseall*—he was talking away, as fast as he could. 14. *Tā sé ag cur alluis ve*—he's perspiring. 15. *Cuir tār*—put past (not suspect)—*ni cuirfinn tāris e*—I shouldn't put it past him (I'm inclined to suspect him of it). 16. *Cuir i leit*—accuse. “*Cá vpuix na vaoome a bi ag cur av' leit?*” (CMO. 306)—“Where are they who accused you?”

(g) 1. *Só scuircighró an Rí teat*—May God assist you.  
 2. *An té a cabrúiseann leis féin, cabrúiseann Dia leis*—  
 God helps those who help themselves.

(h) 1. *Ní d'éanfainn懦 ort*—I didn't do as you wished. 2. *Tá sé ag déanamh amach ar a dó*—it's coming up to two o'clock. 3. *Do dhéan sé anonn ar Tadóig*—He went over to T. 4. *Do dhéanadh sagart de*—he was ordained priest. 5. *Dubairt sé leo neamh-shuim a déanamh de neitibh saoigheata* (CMO. 245)—He told them to despise worldly things. 6. *Ní dhéanann sé puinn taitise de*—he doesn't practise it much.

(i) 1. *Tá an uile duine aca tréis diúltú amuic γ amach do dul cun cómraic aonfir a déanamh, ar breibh ná ar mealladh* (TBC. 128)—Everyone of them has refused point-blank to go to fight in single combat, either for bribe or promise. 2. *Do diúltuis sé mé ar sgingling*—he refused me ls. 3. *Diolfaró tu as, luat nō mall*—you'll pay for it sooner or later. 4. *An mór a diolais ar an mbum?*—How much did you pay for the cow? 5. *Cia leis gur diolais i?*—To whom did you sell her? 6. *Cia dó gur . . . i?*—For whom did you sell her?

(j) 1. *Eiríg as*—resign, give up. 2. *Cao d'eiríg dó?*—What happened him? 3. *Conus d'eiríg le Séadna?*—How did it fare with S.? 4. *Niorb' fada gur eiríg eatorta*—Soon they had a row. 5. *Eiríg a chooladh*—go to bed. 6. *Ní eireocadh sé dhoibh* (Bn. 28)—He kept on importuning them. 7. *Is amlardh a d'eiríseadar cuise* (Bn. 28)—The result was, they attacked him.

(k) 1. *Éist te fuaim na h-abann γ geobard tú breac*—Listen to the murmur of the river, and you'll get a trout! (Also *feit te fuaim*). 2. *Nuaír a h-eitíseadh iad ar an lóisín* (CMO. 297)—When they were refused the lodging. *Níor mait liom é eiteadh ar懦 comh suarach*—I shouldn't like to refuse him such a paltry thing. 3. *Fán ort (teat) go fóil*—wait a while (the preps. are intensive): *O'fánfaimis teat (S.)*—we'd have waited for you: *measadar . . . go mb' féidir na fánfad sé ar an bphocal dubairt sé ar dtúis* (CMO. 309)—They thought that possibly he might not stand

by his first account. 4. *Go b'fóiridh Dia ort*—God help you : *péac, i fóir sinn, a Tigearna*—Look, o Lord, and save us. 5. *Fág fúmsa é*—leave it to me (to decide); *fág agamsa é*—leave it to me (to keep) ; *o'fág sé an Gleann 'sa ráib ann agam*—he left me master of the situation. 6. *Fiafrócar óiot cár coitlais aréir*—you'll be asked where you slept last night : *tarr ar Dia aon trí gurde is ton leat, i geobair iad (S.)*--ask of God any three wishes you like, and you shall have them.

(l) 1. *Tá sé ag gabáil do'n Saolunn le fada*—he has been at Irish for a long time. 2. *Geobair sé o'fuimeannasib ort*—he will whip you. 3. *Do gáib sé le filideact*—he took to poetry. 4. *Do gáib sé a leat-sgéal liom*—he excused himself to me. 5. *Gábam pároún agat*—excuse me. 6. *Imtig teat (ort)*—be off, go on. *Conus o'imtig te S?*—How did it fare with S.? *Tá an buairt úd imtigthe Óiom*—that worry has left me : *O'imtig a bean uaró moé*—his wife left him yesterday.

(m) 1. *Do lean a scosa de'n lic-oisre*—their feet stuck to the ice. 2. *Ná lean doo' cleasardéact*—don't continue your tricks. *Lean ort (teat)*—continue. 4. *Tá orm leanamaint siar ar an gceist*—I must probe the question thoroughly. 5. *Lion an corcán o'uinne*—fill the pot with water (the material) : *lion leis an gcupán é*—fill it with the cup (the instrument). 6. *Ná labair cum go labartar teat*—don't speak till you're spoken to : *is air sm do labair an fáro*—it was of Him the prophet spoke : *an tir sin dar' labramur* (ZCP. II, 276)—this land of which we have spoken.

(n) 1. *Ná leis vo*—don't allow him. 2. *Ní leo spáar . . . i n-aisce leis*—he will not get off with . . . . 3. *Más oic le munntir na h-áite an táró do leogaint uata* (TBC. 11)—If the inhabitants are loth to let the bull be taken from them. 4. *Ná leoq ort*—don't pretend. 5. *Leog deo' baoct-cainnt feasa*—give up your foolish talk now.

(o) 1. *Mait d'úinn ar gcionta*—forgive us our trespasses. 2. *Do méaduis ar an mbuairt aige*—his worries increased. 3. *Ní maoróte duit as do maitreas*—you needn't boast

of your goodness. 4. Is baoisglac nár sgáir sé ar fógsnám teis (S.)—I'm afraid he didn't part with him to his advantage : ní féidir iad a sgáramaint ó n-a céile—they can't be separated.

(p) “ Tá mo bean i gCill Créibh go tréit, ⁊ leac le n-a ceann,

Má tá, ar nóm scáoil léi, ní baoisglac ná go bpran-faró si ann ”—

“ My wife's in C.C. all spent, with a stone by her head,

Well, then, just let her be—she's sure to remain there.”

2. An amhláidh nár ceart an ingean so Ábraham . . . . do scaoileadh ón gceangal san lá na Sabbóroe ? (CMO. 331)—Do you mean to say it was wrong to release this daughter of A. from that bondage on the Sabbath ?
3. Do scáoil sé tairis mé—he took no notice of me.
4. Do scáoil sé uairó mé—he let me go without hindrance.
5. Scaoil cùsgáinn an sgéal—let's have the story at once.
6. Scaoil tart an deoc—let the drink pass. 7. Do scáoil sé urcar fúm (orm, tiom)—he shot at me.

(q) 1. Seasócad-sa túuit—I'll support you. 2. Tá oiread airgead agam ⁊ a seasócadh doom go ceann mi—I've as much money as will last me for a month. 3. Mo seasamh inóiu craibh (N.)—I depend on you to-day. 4. Bioró do seasamh ionam (Im.)—depend upon Me.

(r) 1. Tugás druim láma le droc-beartaib—I turned my back on iniquity. 2. Do tabhrainn druim te scamalt-laiib an tsaoisglair seo (Song)—I should turn away from the clouds of this life. 3. Ní féidir dá taobh an sgéil do tabhairt dá céile—the two sides of the story cannot be reconciled. 4. Tugtar cum a céile iad—let them be brought together. 5. Ní tabair duine uairó an níodh nád bi aige (K.)—one does not give away what one has not. 6. Cao é an ainn ba mait leat a tabhrí ar an leanbh ?—By what name would you have the child called ? 7. Tabhair fé—make the attempt : tug sé fúm—he attacked me.

(s) 1. *Do cuardh ña neart* (TBC. 88)—his strength failed. 2. *Do cuardh ñiom e ðeanamh*—I failed to do it. 3. *Annsan berd onðir ag dul duit ñ scurdeactam* (CMO. 336)—then honour will be due to you from the company. 4. *Do tuig na h-uaisle go raib san ag dul na luige ar aigne na maoine* (CMO. 301)—the nobles realized that this was being impressed on the people's minds. 5. *ni ro-olc a ragadh greas corlata dom*—I could do well with a little sleep. 6. *Do ragad sé i dtairbe duit go mór*—it would do you a lot of good. 7. *Do cuardais as go mór*—you've failed a lot. 8. *Do cuardh ann*—it shrank. 9. *nil aon dul as agat*—you can't escape : *nil aon dul uardh agat*—you can't escape him. 10. *Téigéann si le na h-atair*—she resembles her father. 11. *Do cuardh an cluice orainn*—we lost the game. 12. *Do cuardh ag na tri Colla orta* (K.)—the three C.'s defeated them. 13. “*Téigéann an maonac ó duine go duine, Mar téigéann an t-ean ó bile go bile*”—Yawning passes from one to another, as the bird passes from tree to tree. 14. *Do ragad sé siúd tré poll taratair ag long airgto*—your friend would go through an auger-hole for money. 15. *Nior gao d'óib dul car an mireuilt sm . . . cun a o'feiscint go rabharar cionntac* (CMO. 311)—This miracle should have sufficed for them to see that they were guilty.

(t) 1. *Ac nior tamis teo e marbh* (CMO. 336)—but they did not succeed in killing him. 2. *Tamis sé isteac air*—he became proficient in it. 3. *Tamis sm isteac go cruinn le n-a nouhart fém*—that fitted in exactly with what I said myself. 4. *Tamis duine eigin laistig ñiom sa gnó san*—someone circumvented me in that affair. 5. *'Sé tiocfaró de go marbótar duine eigin*—the result will be that someone will be killed. 6. *Tamis Séadra ña feacant*—S. came to see him. 7. *ni fulair nó ni hi seo an céad uair agat ag aireactant teacht táirsí sm* (S.)—This mustn't be the first time you've heard her mentioned. 8. *Ó burón a tig bruigéann*—contention comes from company. 9. *Tamis si leis go h-eascardh*—it offered no resistance. 10. *Tig leis sm an méar aoeir Plato*—what P. says agrees with that,

307.—(a) **AS**=when :—1. AS *feacaint* do sna h-Aspoi (CMO. 275)—when the A. looked to see . . . . 2. AS *tráct* do leo ar uisge Siúl—when speaking o them about the waters of S.

(b) **TREIS**=when :—1. TREIS an focail sin do nád ó, do crom sé airis (CMO. 305)—when He had said these words He bent down again. 2. TREIS diablaideacta éigim a déanam orta, tuig sé cùicí isteac iad (S. 16)—when he had performed some black magic over them, he brought them in to her.

(c) **AR EASLA**—for fear of—denotes the state or condition of the agent :—le n-easla denotes that the action was accompanied by fear in the agent : o'easla denotes that fear was the origin or motive of the action.

(d) **I GCIIONN**—after—views the space of time from the beginning :—Rágad a baile i gciionn mi—I'll go home in a month's time : treis views the space of time from the end, backwards :—Cuas a baile treis mi do caiteam ann—I went home, after having spent a month there.

(e) There is a similar distinction between **GO CEANN** and **AN FEAD**, both meaning “ for the space of.” The former views it from the beginning, the latter from the end :—1. Ni rágad ann aris go ceann mi—I shan't go again for a month. 2. Fánfad ann ar fead an mi—I shall remain for the month.

(f) **I RÍT**, and **I GCAITTEAMH** mean “ at some time in the course of :—1. Tiocfaid isteac cùigat la éigim i rit na seachtaine—I'll come in to you, some day during the week. 2. Nior labair sé focal i gcaitteamh an méar sin aimsire—he never opened his lips during all that time.

## CHAPTER IX.

### SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE.

#### 308.—A.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction :—

The starting-point may be found in :—Ar ní derna aithrige, acht dul in derchainiud (PH. 221)—For he did not penance, but despaired. Here derna governs both aithrige and dul. But we must often assume an ellipsis. This occurs chiefly in :—(a) Adversative clauses with *ac*. (b) Non-adversative clauses with *agus*. (c) After *fe mar*, and *cóm mait agus . . .* (d) In clauses following others with *ma*, *ta*, *nuair*. (e) In other kinds of sentences :—

(a) Nior leog sé aomniró air, ac an biað vo caiteamh cóm mait is t'fearað sé e (S. 68)—He pretended nothing, but ate the food as well as he could. (After *ac*, supply “*is amharc a òem sé*” or “*is e ruo a òem sé*.” *Biað*, A. or N.).

(b) Cao na taoibh nár labair si γ an sgeal go leir a d'innseint vo? (CMO. 37)—Why did she not speak and tell him the whole affair? After *γ*, supply “*nár òem si.*” *Sgeal* A. after *òem*. See also—CMO. 185, 94; Ser. 79; S. 76.

(c) 1. Tuis na daoine . . . sur labair sé fe mar a beað comact aige (CMO. 158)—The people felt that He spoke as one having power. After *fe mar*, supply—“*a labhratdó tuime go* (*mbeað comact aige*). The ellipsis following the omitted *go* is dropped. 2. Without ellipsis :—Labhrann Isáias párd . . . fe mar a labhratdó sé ta mbeað sé ag féacaint ar a páis γ ar a bás (CMO. 5)—The prophet I. speaks as if he had been an eye-witness of His passion and death. With ellipsis :—*fe mar a beað sé . . .* See also Lúc. 40.

(d) *Tá neospí ói e, ⁊ annsan so bpóspad si Seáona, do brisfead a máctnam a sláinte* (S. 96)—If she were told it, and should then marry S., the thought of it would ruin her health. After *annsan*, supply—*oile rámiseadh*, or *oile mba*. The clause *so . . .* is N. to *rámiseadh*, or *ba*. See also—CMO. 198, 46; S. 103, 96; S. 145; TBC. 26; CCU. 98; BN. 409.

(e) 1. *Tá gáe ri acu sá maorðeam sur geallad túsa* *oc fém, ac teacht ar an slógað so* (TBC. 134)—Every one of the Kings is boasting that you were promised to him, provided he came on this hosting. After *ac*, supply “*so noéanfad sé*.” *Ac* *so*—provided that.

### 309.—B.—Contamination and Other Phenomena :—

1. *Cao ba sád an mait do lot?* (S.)—Where is the need to undo the good?

(a) This might be a contamination of question and answer :—Q.—*Cao ba sád?* (Regular). A.—*An mait do lot.*

(b) Or modelled on—*Cao ba sád a théanam?* (Regular).

(c) Or “*an mait do lot*” may be a phrase-n. gov. by *sád*.

(d) Or the “Sense Construction” principle may serve. *Cao do béalfad an mait do lot?* or *Cao fé noéar an mait do lot?* (both regular) convey the same meaning.

310.—Many of the exx. in 223, G—where anteced. and rel. are both D. are best explained on this principle of Contamination :—

1° *Márbuigeadar an uile ruo i bpúirm duine de shlocht* *gáedeal oár péadadar teacht suas leis* (S. 54)—is a contamination of :—(a) *an uile ruo oár péadadar*, and (b) *an uile ruo sur péadadar teacht suas leis*. The expansion of the compd. rel. into anteced. and rel. is unsatisfactory. One would expect “*leo*” instead of “*leis*.”

2° *Grádmair tar gáe ní oár tús duine grád oó riám* *pós* (Im. 248)—is a contamination of—(a) *gáe ní sur tús duine grád oó riám pós*; and (b) *gáe ní oár grádmair* *duine pós*. Expansion of the compd. rel. would require

óib instead of ó.—SAC NI Ó VIÓB-SAN GUR TUG DUINE  
GRÁDÓ ÓIB RIAM FÓS.

3° Táinig amach as an loc an capall doib' ailtne dár  
teaghas mo súil riám air (Br. 33)—is a contamination of—  
(a) an capall doib' ailtne dár bfeaca riám, and (b) an c.  
doib' ailtne gur teaghas mo súil riám air. Here again,  
expansion of the compd. rel. would require orca instead  
of air.

**311** (a) NIL TEIGEAS AR AN MEATLÚ AC MUINNTIR NA  
H-EIREANN DO DUL ḡ EOLAS A CUR AG A SCAMNT FÉM AIRIS  
(SS. 84)—The only remedy for the degeneracy is for the  
people of I. to go and re-learn their own language. If  
the construction had been uniform, we should have had—  
m. na h-E. DO DUL ḡ DO CUR EOLAS. . . . The sentence  
is a contamination of this, and—NIL . . . AC GO NOÉANPÁD  
M. NA H-E. DUL ḡ EOLAS A CUR . . . .

(b) NI RAIB AON TSÍLGE CUIGE AC MUINNTIR NA H-EIREANN  
DO CUR LE CÉILE ḡ A NEART GO LÉIR O'IMPÁIL I GCOINNIB  
NA NGALL (AR. 64)—There was no way for it, but that the  
I. people should pull together, and turn their united  
strength against the Foreigner. A contamination of :—  
(a) m. na h-E DO CUR LE C., ḡ O'IMPÁIL A MRT GO LÉIR . . .  
and (b) AC GO NOÉANPÁD M. NA H-E. CUR LE C., ḡ A NEART  
GO LÉIR. . . .

(c) NUAIR A BÍ OIREADÓ AMUIC AIGE ḡ GUR ÓBÍC LEO GO  
NOIÚLTÓCAÐ AN CURD EILE D'E ÓBÍL TAR A CEANN, DO  
COMAMEADAR AN TLIFFE AR SIÚBAL (MSF. 26)—When he  
had spent so much that they believed the others would  
refuse to pay up for him, they instituted legal proceedings.  
A contamination of—(a) BÍ OIREADÓ SAN AMUIC AIGE GUR  
ÓBÍC LEO . . . . and (b) NI RAIB OIREADÓ SAN AMUIC AIGE ḡ  
BA ÓBÍC LEO.

(d) NÁRB' FULAIR É FÉM A DUL GO LERÚSALEM ḡ MÓRÁN  
O'FULANG (CS. 46)—That He must go to J. and suffer  
many things.—A contamination of (a) É FÉM A DUL ḡ  
A O'FULANG; and (b) NÁRB' FULAIR DO FÉM DUL ḡ MÓRÁN  
A O'F.

(e) Multiple Rel. Construction is a sort of contamina-  
tion :—IS IAD IS TRÉIME ATA AG DÉANAMH NA HOIBRE—They

are doing the work most zealously—is a contamination of :—(a) *is iad atá . . . . and (b) is iad is tréime.*

(f) The use of *ná*, *ac*, *mar* in Identification sentences, Type II, b, c, d, is also a sort of contamination. E.g., *Is é is fearra duit ná dul γ greas a coirlao duit fém*, is a contamination of :—1. *is é is fearra duit dul . . . . and 2. ní fearra duit ruo a déanfa ná dul . . . .*

(g) “*Agsus*” is often due to contamination :—*bí iongna orm a feabas is do ñem sé an gnó*—is a contamination of—1. *bí . . . . a feabas a ñem . . . . and 2. bí . . . . cóm̄ait is a ñem . . . .*

(h) *Bí uirri a teact pé ar bit céard a tioctar as* (Smb. 35)—She had to come whatever the result might be.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit ruo a tioctar as ; and 2. ba cuma céard a tioctar as.*

(i) *Pé ar bit cé an galar bí ag gabair don gluaisteán* (Smb. 108)—Whatever malady affected the motor.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit galar bí . . . . and 2. ba cuma cé'n galar bí . . . .*

(j) *Pé ar bit cé'n coir atá déanta agat* (Smb. 164)—Whatever crime you have committed.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit coir atá . . . . and 2. is cuma cé'n coir atá . . . .*

**312** (a) In “*breis agus*,” more than, and “*ionann agus*,” the same as, *agus* has developed a new meaning:—1. *Tá breis is mó doctam airgeid agam*—I have more than enough money—goes back to—*tá mo doctam a. agam γ breis*. Similarly—*Is ionann γ bás an beata so*—this life is a sort of death<*Is ionann an beata so γ bás*.

(b) *Munab ionann agus*—is always elliptical :—1. *Táim réidh anois munab ionann is riám* (S.)—I’m done for now, if ever I was.=*Táim réidh anois munab ionann (anois) γ riám*. 2. *Do ñem sé an teagass mar a déanfa dhuine go raibh cómact aige, munab ionann is na Scribneoirí γ na Fairisínig* (CS. 19)—He taught as one having power, as compared with the S. and Ph.<*munab ionann (é fém) is . . . .*

(c) 1. *ní piú biorán is é*—It is insignificant.—Instead of saying “it is not worth a pin,” a pin (a type of the insignificant) and it (the thing in question) are put

together, and the statement is made about the combination. So—2. *Níor b'fíú teo biorán i anam duine* (S. 221)—They cared nothing whatever about a human life.

(d) In “*nó so*,” until, *so* has originated in much the same way as *nó* in “*ní fulair nó*.”—1. *Oubairt sé so bfranfaró sé ann so bfrisgeadó sé bás, nó so dtiocfaró duine eisim sá fuasgant*—He said he would stay until he died, or until someone came to save him. Omitting the first *so-* clause, we get, with illogical retention of *nó*—*Oubairt sé so bfranfaró sé nó so dtiocfaró*. . . . 2. Or it might have developed more simply thus :—*Oubairt sé so bfranfaró sé ann, nó so dtiocfaró* . . . He said he would stay, or else that someone would come. This would easily lead to :—He said he would stay till someone came.

### 313.—C.—Repetition of Words :—

1. Repetition often implies emphasis :—(a) *Tus sé ciatl doibh i tuisgeant, i tus sé doibh saor-toil* (CMO. 1)—He gave them sense and understanding, and over and above these, free-will. (b) *O'fhlilis lósa an páis tar ceann na cine daonna, le grád do'n cine daonna, i do tós an páis sin de'n cine daonna an easgaine do bi curta ag an bpeaca ar an gcmé daonna.* (CMO. 48)—J. suffered His passion for the human race, out of love for the human race, and this passion released the human race from the curse which sin had laid upon the human race. Here the repetition is most effective. It is a solemn reminder of the universality of the sin-curse, and of the beneficent effects of Redemption.

2. When the Projected N. occurs, a pron. takes its place where the subj. (or pred. in is sentences) would normally be :—(a) *An té mactnócaidh air is doic liom go dtuisgeadó sé* (MSF. 206)—I think anyone who reflected would understand. . . . Here, if the Projected N. were not used, too many words would intervene between *tuisgeadó* and its object. (b) *An bean cos-nochtaithe is i a bì ann* (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman (i essential, in order to avoid VS !).

3. Both the vb. and the subj. (in pron. form) are repeated, when a clause or phrase qualifying the subj. or obj. intervenes :—(a) between a trans. vb. and its obj. (b) between an intrans. vb. and the complement of the pred.—(a) *Oo tóis an fear n-a ráib an gunna 'na láim aige, oo tóis sé an gunna le spórt* (ms. p. 27)—The man who held the gun raised it in sport. (b) *Cuaró an duine oo teigiseadh cuaró sé suas go dtí an teampul* (CMO. 183)—The man who had been cured went up to the Temple.

4 Sometimes the vb. is repeated in the pl., or with a preceding particle :—(a) *Bí oaoime, ins na h-áiteanaib a bí i bprao ó lerúalem, biobair ag cosnú ar iad fém a cur i dtreao taistil* (CMO. 295)—People in places far from J. were beginning to prepare for the journey. (b) *Oa n-abraim-se leis na fearaib úd a támis cùgam an oróce uo, gá iarraró orm beit am' stiúrtóir orta, oa n-abraim ná féadfainn e* (ms. p. 170)—Had I said to the men who came to me that night, asking me to guide them—had I said that I couldn't. . . .

5. A word is repeated sometimes to avoid vagueness and ambiguity.—*Bí a crorðe lán ve droc-aighe, ac coimeád sé istig an droc-aighe* (CMO. 58)—His heart was full of evil thoughts, but he kept these evil thoughts concealed.

**314.—D.—Order of Words :—**1. For departures from the normal order, see 309-313. 2. With vbs. other than *is*, the normal order is vb., subj., complement of pred. But often the whole pred. must come first, the subj. coming last :—(a) *Oo ciocfað orca an báis a geall Dia doib* (CMO. 1)—The death with which God had threatened them would come upon them. K.'s prose sometimes ignores this device for securing lucidity :—(b) *So tarla an tsuiteac céadna lér téig mac na baintreabtarde a rún vo* (Bk. 2)—Until he met the same willow to which the widow's son had confided his secret. (Better put *vo* immediately after *tarla*). (c) Or the logical subj. comes first :—*An tuisge a tabhrad-sa vo, déanfaró tobar uisge de istig ann, ag fiarad cun beata siorurðe* (CMO. 148)—The water I will give him shall

become a well within him springing up to life everlasting. An *t-uisge* is abs. The grammatical subj. is *tobair*. (d) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is indefinite, it is projected (231). (e) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is definite, it may come either first (Types IV, V., XI.), or last (Types II, III, IX).

### 315.—E.—Simile and Metaphor :—

1. K. uses metaphor freely :—(a) *Céirín do gáe créact an crábað* (TBB. 64)—Piety is a salve for every wound. Spiritual failings are compared to bodily wounds, which facilitates the otherwise bold statement that piety is “a healing plaster.” (b) *Luib-teigear do gáe iot an toir-gníom* (TBB. 64)—Satisfaction is a healing herb for every hurt. Note the alliteration, and see F.

2. In his bolder metaphors K. invariably prepares the way, by giving the fact or fable on which the metaphor is founded :—

(a) *Re triall tar tear luat-connac na locto* (TBB. 22)—while journeying over the swift-waved sea of sin. Here, and in the metaphors which follow, there was a previous reference to “frail earthen vessels sailing on stormy seas in the darkness of the night.” Hence :—  
 (b) *bóchna na beatarð tadaill*—the ocean of this material life. (c) *oróce na h-urcórœ*—the night of iniquity. (d) *rá doib-CEO dubhaince γ droc-rúm*—under the darksome fog of vice and ill-will. (d) *so cuan a críce dérdeanaise i scurracán criad na colna*—to the haven of his last end, in the earthy skiff of the flesh. (e) *laim-dée na loct do leonarð γ do laorað le h-óro na h-aistríse ar teic tuim an toir-gníoma* (TBB. 24)—to wound and mangle the idols of our vices with the hammer of repentance on the bare anvil of satisfaction.

The alliteration in these exx. may be taken as a symbol of the comparison involved in every metaphor, and this symbolic function is a justification of the artifice, when kept within due bounds. See F.

3.—Modern prose writers use metaphor more sparingly, especially if the comparison involved is strange. Where

English has a metaphor, I. will :—(a) have no metaphor at all ; or it will be “toned down.” (b) there will be a different metaphor. (c) there will be a definitely stated metaphor, instead of allusiveness of English; or, instead of a metaphor, a simile :—

(a) I . . . revealing her noble graceful hull (Wreck of the Grosvenor)—*do ḡeibti ráðarc ar aðmáð a sleasa.*  
2. who strain their eyes—*aða að fáire go vlt.* 3. forging new implements—*slíste nua aici 'á ḡceaparð.*

(b) The fulness of his heart would not suffer him to eat a morsel—*bi toðt cónn trom san ar a cróide ná leogfarð sé do píoc v'ite.*

(c) 1. icy temper—*oð mérð voicall γ duairceas a bi air.* 2. the gay butterflies—*is cuma nō peroleacán iadó.*

4. Where the metaphor would seem crude, it is toned down by such clauses as—*mar a dearfá*—so to speak ; *dar teat*—one would think ; or *tá* is used,+in+a G. pron., instead of a downright predication with *is* :—  
(a) *B'uacþás, mar a dearfá, a gniom*—Her deed was, if I may put it so, a terror. (b) *B'a cuma nō splannc, dar teat, a gniom*—his deed, if I may say so, was as a lightning flash. (c) *Ni þearð mo céamn na cloic, ná mo cróide na cró teme, mar atá*—I should not have a head of stone, nor a heart of fire, as I have.

### 316.—F.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets :—

Alliteration symbolizes the unity of idea involved in Hendiadys, *i.e.*, the vivid expression of a single idea by two or more words representing facets of that idea :—  
1. *Bi uðlac ar m'aigne, γ sgeit γ sgeon aðm' cróide* (TBC. 133)—There was a load on my mind and fright and terror in my heart. 2. *Tá tuirse γ troma-cróide orm* (TBC. 148)—I'm weary and heavy of heart. 3. *Ni béal san binneas e* (TBC. 91)—His mouth is a mouth of melody. 4. *San cnead san créact air* (TBC. 160)—absolutely unwounded.

### 317.—G.—Illogical Elements in Construction :—

1. *Nil aominne is fearr go vþuit a fíos san aige ná aige fém* (CMO. 309)—No one knows better than him-

self. Here, instead of *aige réin*, we should expect *é réin*, as the sentence is a combination of :—(a) *Nil aomne is pearr ná é réin*. (b) *Nil aomne go bpuil 'fios san aige*.

2. Cf. the exx. under Contamination, 309, and the retention of *nó*, in *ní fuitair nó*, and in *nó go=until* (312, d).

3. Cf. also the use of the copula with verbal forms :—  
 (a) *Ba óbair dom tuitim*—I almost fell. (b) *B'facsas dom* (Conn.)—It seemed to me. (c) *Is feas dom*—I know.

### 318.—H.—Chiastic Construction :—

*Ói cumas ar ceangal ⁊ ar scaoile, ar neam ⁊ ar talam, geallta óo ; ⁊ bí geallta óo ná buadhad geatai lprinn ar an eaglais sm* (CMO. 278)—The power of binding and loosing, in heaven and on earth, had been promised him, and there had been promised him that the gates of Hell should not prevail against the Church.

### 319.—I.—Progressive Forms :—

I. often prefers the progressive forms, with *tá*, where English has no vb. to be :—1. *Is móroe mo thian é cios tusa beit gá rád san liom* (fSA.)—I desire to hear it all the more, since you tell me this. 2. *Ói an t-aicair ató iarradh é cur cun suaimhneis* (CMO. 341)—The father tried to soothe him. 3. *Sé gnó an tsagairt beit ag cur a gurde suas*—It is the priest's business to pray.

### 320.—J.—Irish objective rather than subjective :—

1. *Ba greamhar an sgéal é*—We have thus the singular spectacle. 2. In the case of Dublin we have seen the conflict. . . .—*Oo òem muinntir Ólat Cliat a noiceall cum. . . .*

### 321.—K.—Irish concrete rather than abstract :—

1. “the excellencies of full-bodied narrative”—*finsint a cur air a bheadh ar feabhas ⁊ ar ailneacht ⁊ ar crummeas*. 2. “the onward sweep of events”—*gniom a déanam i ndiaidh gníom*. 3. “the calm and chastity”

of the pauses of Fate"—*Sac nio na staobh, i an cinneamhaint ag feacaint anuas orta go neamh-fuaodraic i go neamh-cuiseac.*

### 322.—Difference of Colouring :—

1. Less highly-coloured than English :—(a) “ without taking this precaution ”—*in’ eaighmuis sin.* (b) “ alive with children ”—*lán an baill bailigthe ann.* (c) “ basket-chairs ”—*na cataoireaca mór leatana.* (d) “ flaming sword ”—*clardeam noctaite.* (e) “ children of Taliesin and Ossian ”—*clann na Dreataine Biúge, i Sæoir na h-Eireann.*

2. I. more highly-coloured than E.—(a) “ of the utmost beauty ”—*ar ailneacht an doimhne (ar aiteas na cruinne).* (b) “ generation after generation ”—*na seacta steacta.* (c) “ the greater delicacy and spirituality ”—*an blas úd ar ailneacht i ar uaisleacht i ar spioradáiltacht.* (d) “ as she went over to starboard ”—*nuaír a luaisgí i deiseal te truime nírt na gaoithe.* (e) “ I don’t know in the world ”—*ni fheadar ó cùis árdaibh na naoi bfionn (S.).* (f) “ exquisite ”—*áluinn tar na beartaibh.*

## PART IV.

---

### PROSODY.

323.—Irish metres are either syllabic or accentual. The former developed from the L. hymns of the 5th and 6th centuries (*Thurn.*), and most I. poetry, between the 8th and the 17th centuries, was written in one or other of the many varieties (there were more than seventy!). The accentual metres were introduced about the end of the 16th century, under the influence of English poetry.

### SYLLABIC METRES.

#### 324.—Dán Díreach :—

A. Óeibhre :—*Lit.* “cut in two”*<de* composition form of *oo*, and *bithe*, part of O.I. *benaid*, *cuts*, etc. The metre was so called, because the couplets (except in *O. imrinn*) do not rhyme or assonate, as they do in the other syllabic metres. The rules of Óeibhre are :—

1° Four lines (*ceatramain*) in each stanza (*rann*). The first couplet is the *seolao* (*teat-rann tosaig*), the second the *cóimao* (*teat-rann óeirro*).

2° Seven syllables in each line. (Elision to be reckoned with).

3° *Cóimao*—rhyme or assonance between the last word of each of the odd lines and the last word of the even lines. The initial consonant of the *Rinn* (see 4°) is neglected, but the vowels must agree with those of the rhyming portion of the *Áiro-Rinn*, and the following consonants must be of the same class.

The consonants are divided thus :—(a) S (the Queen of consonants) stands alone. (b) The breath stops—*p*, *t*, *c*. (c) The voiced stops—*b*, *d*, *g*. (d) The breath

continuants—ph (p, f), t (older th), c. (e) The voiced continuants—v, ð, ȝ, l, m, n; and n. (f) The double consonants—ll, m (O.I. mm mb) nn rr; and ng. When the consonants are of the same class the cónarðað is slán; otherwise, bríste.

4° Rímn and Áiðro-rímn.—I.e., the final words of ll. 2 and 4 (áiðro-rímn) must have at least (and in the strictest Óeisbriðe, at most) one syllable more than the final words in ll. 1 and 3 (rímn). The rhyme in Óeisbriðe is un-rhythymical, for, while the rímn is stressed, the rhyming part of the áiðro-rímn is unstressed.

5° Uaim=Alliteration :—(a) Any init. vowel alliterates with any other init. vowel. (b) Any consonant alliterates with the same consonant, or its aspirated or eclipsed form. (c) But p alliterates only with f or þ (not p). When init. f is aspirated, it is the following sound that alliterates :—Tasair team, a fiait lífe—Prove to me, O Lord of Liffey (t : t). ts strictly alliterates only with ts, and s only with s. (d) Only unstressed words may stand between alliterating words. When these latter are the last stressed words in the l., we have fior-uaim, or uaim cluaise. Otherwise, uaim gnúise, or uaim súla, or cul-uaim.

6° Uaitne—Union or vowel-concord :—(a) Between the word in caesura (I.e., the final word of the odd lines) and a word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. This is called Áicill (Anticipation), and is obligatory in the cónarð of most non-Óeisbriðe metres, when the word in caesura does not consonate with the end-rhyme. Áicill may be amus (7°). (b) Between any word in the 1st l. and any word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. It is sufficient if the vowels are both broad or both slender.

7° Amus :—Vowel and consonant correspondence between a word in the odd lines, and a word of the same number of syllables in the even ll. The vowels should be the same, the consonants of the same class.

Ex.— lomða scéat maic ar muire  
 fá moltar a miordbuile,  
 Do ȝéab ar an óig n-iodam  
 Scéat as cóir do creridomam (AOD. 56)—

Many a good tale is told of M., in which her wonders are extolled ; I will tell of the pure Virgin, A tale worthy of credit.

Observe :—1. Four ll. of 7 syllables. 2. Cómardaoð slán :—Muíre : miorbuite (r : i), and iorðam : crerioðam (ð : m). 3. Rinn and airo-rinn. 4. Uaim cluaise: mait, Muíre ; moltar, miorbuite ; ois, n-iorðam (n- does not count) ; cír, crerioðam. 5. Amus :—ois : cír (s : r) ; séab : scéal (v : i).

Bátað (Elision) :—When a word ending in a vowel is followed by a word beginning with a short vowel, the latter is generally elided. Thus :—fada an tréimse atá sise (KP. 62)—here the a of an, and of atá are both elided. Hiatus is sometimes allowed :—Nochan faca beola eic—Never have I seen any horse's mouth.

B.—Rannaisgeacht mó�r :—1. The stanza=7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup>, 7<sup>i</sup> (7<sup>i</sup>×4). 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. There is generally uaim, uaithne, amus.

Exx. (a) Céadomh luir lúdas tar ord  
1 lorg deamna, vioðal sars,  
Céadomh ro-ðaib saimnt um sait  
Céadomh ro-brait fosa n-aro (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Observe :—1. Cómardaoð slán :—sars : n-aro (s : v ; both vowels short). 2. Amus :—ord : lorg (monosyllable—o : s) ; sait : brait (ro- does not count). This latter is aicill—obligatory, as sait and aro do not rhyme. 3. Uaim absent in l. 1, if the i of lúdas is consonantal ; Uaim gnúise :—deamna : vioðal. fior-uaim :—saimnt : sait ; fosa : n-aro (n- does not interfere).

(b) Deacair teact o galar gráid,  
An galar dom-car fá ciac,  
Ni bi an galar gan gom bróm,  
Galar nac fóir luiib ná liais (pp. 31)—

Hard to escape from love's disease, The disease that hath settled me in sorrow ; It lacketh not the wound of grief, Nor can be eased by herb or leech.

Observe :—1. The a of an is elided (l. 3). 2. fior-uaim :—galar : gráid ; dom-car : ciac (dom- does not count) ; luiib : liais. 3. Uaim gnúise : galar : gom.

4. *Aicill* :—*bróm* : *póir* (*amus*). 5. The rhyme *cíac* : *táis* is not good. *c* and *s* do not belong to the same class. The diphthongs also disagree.

### C.—Rannaiséact mór SÁIRID (=3<sup>1</sup>+3 (7<sup>1</sup>) ) :—

Δ Rí rionn,

Srō tuib mo teac nō srō pionn,

Noča n-iaðparðear pri neac

Nár<sup>i</sup> iaða Criost a teac fríom (Cf. PIM. 14)

O King of stars, Whether my house be dark or light,  
It shall not be closed against anyone, Lest Christ close  
His against me.

Observe :—1. *Uaim* absent except in l. 1. The rhymes *rionn* : *pionn* : *fríom* compensate somewhat. 2. *Aicill* :—*neac* : *teac*. 3. Cómardao slán :—*rionn* : *pionn* : *fríom*. 4. Nár<sup>i</sup>=lest ; iaða, 3 sg. pres. Subj.

D.—Rannaiséact Óeas :—1. Stanza=7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>2</sup>=7<sup>2</sup>×4. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. Generally *uaim*, *uaitne*, *amus*.

Ex.—Δ Eamain iorðnac aoibinn,

As a fiðrað aro-pérðim,

Is mó� noine deo' gualainn

Ro-Ósaið ríge for Éirinn (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Pleasant Emania, full of ranked hosts, Whose woods I tell of, Many a generation from your shoulder has obtained Kingship over Ireland.

Observe :—1. *Uaim* only in :—*iorðnac* : *aoibinn* ; *fiðrað* : *pérðim* (*aro-* does not count). The *uaim* in *gualainn* : *Ósaið* may be intentional. 2. *Uaitne* :—*iorðnac* : *fiðrað* (not *amus*, as *c* and *ð* are in different classes). 3. *Aicill* absent in the *cómardao*, though there is *amus*—*noine* : *ríge* (*n* : *s*). 4. No elision in l. 1. 5. Cómardao slán :—*pérðim* : *Éirinn*. 6. Mór is neut. Hence the eclipsis. *víne* is G. pl.

### E.—Rannaiséact Óeas SÁIRID (3<sup>2</sup>+3(7<sup>2</sup>) ) :—

Corp sleaman

Δgus taoð þaða reamair,

Verð an colann ag lobðað

Is an t-anam ag veaman (Cf. PIM. 14)—

Nearly all characteristics absent, except the requisite no. of ll. and syllables, and the end-rhymes. These latter make up, to some extent, for the absence of the other essentials. In the older version there was uaitne :—cholainn : anim.

F.—**Séadnáð (Séadrað)** :—Derived from séad, path (or séad, jewel) and an old generic word for “metre,” nath. Séadrað has the collective or abstract suffix—rað.—1. The stanza=8<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>1</sup>, 8<sup>2</sup>, 7<sup>1</sup>. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. Uaim obligatory between last stressed word of l. 1, and the 1st stressed word of l. 2. 4. Uaitne or amus, or both. 5. Aicill—between final word of l. 3, and the 2nd last stressed word of l. 4. 6. Ceann—the final word of ll. 2, 4, is monosyllabic.

Clann Israél uair san Éigipt  
Fa anbruro nírt námáð Dé,  
So mbrioc̄t ngléisiomlám ngeas noorca,  
Eisiomlair deas Tolca Té (Háic. 85)—

The children of I. of old in E., Under dire oppression from God's enemies, With fully prepared magic of dark spells Were a pretty exemplar of Ireland.

Observe :—1. Fíor-uaim :—uair : Éigipt ; Tolca : Té. 2. Uaim gnúise :—nírt : námáð ; ngléisiomlám : ngeas. 3. The special uaim in ll. 1, 2 :—Éigipt : anbruro. 4. Cómárhoð slán :—Dé : Té. 5. Amus :—ngléisiomlám : eisiomlair ; ngeas : deas ; noorca : Tolca (This last is the obligatory Aicill). 6. Hiatus in l. 2. 7. Ceann :—Final word in ll. 2, 4 is monosyllabic.

G.—**Deacnáð beas** :—1. Stanza=4×5<sup>1</sup>. 2. Rhyming couplets. 3. Uaim, uaitne, amus.

Baot sac beart na c buan,  
Ni cuan go cuan Dé,  
Iosa is lárore luam,  
Truas ná togas é !

Foolish each deed that perishes, There is no haven save God's, Jesus is the stoutest Pilot, Pity that chooseth Him not.

Observe :—1. Fíor-uaim in ll. 1, 3 ; uaim gnúise in ll. 2, 4. 2. Cómárhoð slán :—Dé : é. 3. Elision of i

of is in l. 3. 4. *togas* is dissyllabic. 5. *Aicill* in both couplets.

- H.—**Deacnach mór** :—1. Stanza=8<sup>2</sup>, 6<sup>2</sup>, 8<sup>2</sup>, 6<sup>2</sup>.  
2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *Uaim*, *uaite*ne or *amus*, or both.  
4. *Aicill* not obligatory.

*Fearg an Comhdeadh re cloinn Ádamh,*

*Toirneadh roinn a rúin-nimh,*

*Ní iomda dún in-ar n Daoimh*

*San túr tiomda an Dúlmh* (ÓD. 22)—

May the Lord's wrath with Adam's children, His bitterness against us decrease ; not many of us men but merit the Creator's anger.

Observe :—1. *Cómardao slán* :—*rúin-nimh* : *Dúlmh*.—Consonants of class (f), when preceded by a long vowel, may rank with class (e) (ISP. 5) ; hence the double n does not spoil the rhyme. 2. *Amus* :—*cloinn* : *roinn* ; *Comhdeadh* : *toirneadh* ; *iomda* : *tiomda*. 3. *Uaim* *gnúise* in l. 1 ; *fior uaim* in the others. 4. *Uaitne* :—*dún* : *túr* (Or *amus* acc. to l. above). 5. No *Aicill*. 6. The a of *an* is elided in l. 4.

- I.—**Cas-Óairdne** :—“ Twisted (complex) Bardic Art ” :—1. Stanza=4 (7<sup>3</sup>). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *Uaim*, *uaite*ne, *amus*.

*Viol molta maor tigearna*

*Ní maor so nac so garma,*

*Fiu maor muiir mo tigearna*

*Na taoibh dún ni volabha* (AÓD. 35)—

Worthy of praise is the Lord's Steward, No steward this that cannot be called upon ! The Steward of my Lord's castle deserves That I should find it easy to tell of him.

Observe :—1. Seven syllables in each l. with tri-syllabic verse-ends. 2. *Uaim-gnúise* :—*molta* : *maor* ; *maor* : *muiir*. *Fior-uaim* :—*so* : *so garma* ; *dún* : *volabha*. 3. *Cómardao slán* :—*so garma* : *volabha*. 4. *Amus* :—*maor* : *taoibh* ; *muiir* : *dún*. 5. No *Aicill*.

- J.—**Rionnaid** :—1. Stanza=4 (6<sup>2</sup>). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *Uaim*, *uaite*ne, *amus*. 4. *Aicill* frequent, though not always, in the *cómardao*.

Séan, a Chríost, mo labra,  
 A Comhde seacht níme,  
 Ro-m-beirtear buard téire  
 A Rí gréime gile (P.O. Prol. 1-4)—  
 Bless, O Christ, my speech, O Lord of seven heavens,  
 Let the guerdon of devotion be given to me, O King  
 of the white sun.

Observe :—1. Six syllables in each l. with dissyllabic verse-ends. 2. Cómároð slán :—níme : gile. 3. Uaim gnúise :—beirtear (ro-m- does not count) : buard. 4. Fíor-uaim :—gréime : gile. 5. Amus (and Aicill) :—téire : gréime.

### ACCENTUAL METRES.

325.—General conditions :—(a) The feet are measured from stress to stress, one stress often governing several syllables, so that a foot may contain one, two or more syllables. (b) In elision, the unaccented vowel is elided; if both are unaccented and both short, either may be elided. (c) Uaim is common enough. (d) Unaccented syllables before the first stress are called the “rútag.” (e) Internal and end rhymes will be noted in each species.

A.—LÁOÍ (Láord; i. fíannarðeacta) :—This represents a transition stage between the old syllabic, and the later accentual metres.

Note :—1. Four-lined stanzas. 2. Three or four stresses in each line. 3. The no. of syllables varies from 6 to 9. 4. Rhyming couplets. 5. Internal rhyme in each couplet like Aicill in most non-Oeibróe metres. 6. There is not the same regulated stress in the LÁOÍ as there is in the other accentual metres. Examples :—

(a) A Oisín uasaíl, a mic an ríos  
 Dob' fearr gníom gaisse agus gliað,  
 Aitris dúinn aois gan mairis  
 Cionnus do mairis o'éis na bfiann (L.O.).

Observe :—1. The stresses are marked. 1. Uaim in ll. 1, 2. 3. The end-rhyme—gliað : bfiann. 4. Aicill :—ríos : gníom ; mairis : mairis.

(b) *ba deirge* *ca gruað ná an rós*  
*ba gile* *ca snóð ná eala* *car tuinn,*  
*ba milse blað a bélín pós*  
*ná mil vā h-ól tré deirg-fion* (l.O.).

Observe :—1. Elision in l. 1, and double elision in l. 2. 2. *uaim* in l. 3. 3. End-rhyme—*tuinn* : *fion*. 4. *Aicill* :—*rós* : *snóð*; *pós* : *h-ól*, in both the final consonants are in different classes. 5. *Rutag* in each l.

B.—*Rosc* :—Arranged, not in stanzas of uniform length, but in (generally unequal) sections, with short lines of two or three feet; the accented vowel of the last foot being the same, in each section :—

*laR sclos vā riomao*  
*miorbuilrde fosa*  
*O'lorruarð, ri-flait,*  
*Dubairt gan mearball,*  
*" 'Se eom baiste seo*  
*An ceann sur teascas ve,*  
*O'éirig o'anapreib*  
*O's na marbaib "* (St. S. 11).

There are two "sections" here :—

(a)	~   o ~   i ~	(b)	ue ~   a ~ ~
	~   ú ~   i ~		~   ó   a ~ ~
	1 ~   i ~		~   au ~   a ~ ~
			~   e 1 ~   a ~ ~
			~   ó   a ~ ~

There is a *rutag* in ll. 1, 2, 5, 6. Line 5 might be scanned thus :—*e ~ | a ~ ~*. *Mearball*, *marbaib* are trisyllabic.

C.—*Caoineadh* (*Tuirreamh*, *Marbhna*) :—*Caoineadh* means elegy, but poems written in this metre have sometimes no connection with the dead. Ex. (b) below was launched against the Cromwellian settlers, but its prevailing tone is one of melancholy pathos. And elegies are sometimes written in other metres, e.g., *Rosc*. The structure is :—

1. Four-lined stanza.
2. Three or four feet in each line.
3. Last foot in each line has the same rhyme all through the poem.
4. The other stresses vary in each line or in each couplet.
5. But there must be assonance between two of these stresses in each line.

(a) *Do bátaró iot is bliocáit na fóbla,  
ní tig feoite ne feoir ar móintib,  
Tug san sion ar gaoit beit glórach  
Is tug an imteact timteac is tóirneac* (KP. 25).

The metre is :—

1.	~	á ~	í ~	í ~	ó ~
2.	~	i	eo ~	eo ~	ó ~
3.	u ~		í ~	í ~	ó ~
4.	u ~		í ~	í ~	ó ~

Observe :—1. The last foot is ó ~ all through this caomhaó. 2, Assonance in 2nd and 3rd foot in each line. 3. First foot of 1. 2 is monosyllable. 4. No rútag in 1. 3. 4. Third foot in 1. 4 is trisyllabic.

(b) *Do cuala scéal do céas ar ló mé,  
Is tug san oróce níaoirse bróm mé,  
Ó'fág mo creat gan neart mná seolta,  
Gan bríg, gan meabair, gan greann, gan fógnam* (p.f. 9).

The metre is :—

1.	~	ua ~	é ~	é ~	ó ~
2.	~	u ~	i ~	i ~	ó ~
3.	á ~	ea ~	ea ~	ó ~	
4.	i ~	au ~	au ~	ó ~	

Observe :—1. Last foot ó ~ all through the poem. 2. Assonance in 2nd and 3rd feet. But the assonating vowels are different in each l. This prevents a monotonous effect. 3. The stresses in 1st foot also are different in each l. 4. Elision in 1. 2. 5. The entire absence of uaim.

D.—*Aimráin* :—Originally a song to be sung. Now, any accentual poem (other than A. B. C. above), whether meant to be sung or not. There are many varieties, according to the no. of ll. in the stanza, this often depending on the exigencies of the music, or of the *motif* in the mind of the poet :—

(a) *Aimráin* written in couplets the stresses generally varying from couplet to couplet. Brian Merriman's "Cúirt an Meadomh Oróce" is a typical example :—

1. { *Do buail sí crúcaim' cul' s im' cábá,*  
*Is gluais cum siúbal go lúbaid láidir,*

2. { Scioib téi sios mé tríd na gLeannnta,  
     { Cnuic bám burde } is go binn an teampail (CmO.11)

The metre of the couplets is :—

1.—2 ( ~ | ue ~ | ú ~ | ú ~ | á ~ ).  
 2.—2 (   | i ~ | i ~ | i ~ | au ~ ).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 1, 4. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each couplet.

(b) Amhrán fém :—1. Stanza=four ll. with uniform stresses in each. 2. Five feet in each line. 3. Two feet in the line assonate :—

O'm sceol ar Árdo-muis fáil ní cooilaim oróce,  
 'S do b'reord go brát mé dala } a pobuit vitis,  
 Tró ró } fada } atáro 'na b'fáil re broscar bioðbað,  
 fá deorð sur fás a lán do'n cosal triota (KP. 19).

The metre is :—4 ( ~ | o ~ | á ~ | á ~ | o ~ | i ~ ).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 2, 3. Ró-fada atáro=ró atáro. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each line.

(c) Four-footed line amhrán, with uniform stresses in each line. Assonance either between the first two feet, or between the second and third. For Exx. see p.5. 54-5, and compare with Caomeadó.

(d) Four-line amhrán, with two systems of stress, or even three, the number of stresses varying somewhat :—

An fáid a b'eo éan 'san aer amuis,  
 Is taitneam na gréime } ar Sléibtíb mis,  
 Seasfarð a bonn ar a talam go teann,  
 Is ní leasfar a ceann le náire.

Three stress-systems here :—

- (a) Lines 1, 2 :— ~ | á ~ ~ | e ~ | e ~ | i (ú).
- (b) Line 3 :—   | á ~ ~ | ou ~ ~ | á ~ ~ | au
- (c) ,, 4 :—   | á ~ ~ | au ~ | á ~

Observe :—1. The stanza=2a+b+c. 2. The 2nd and 3rd feet in (a) assonate (é : e) in every stanza of the poem. 3. There is aicill dúbalta between the end of (b) and the beginning of (c).—á ~ ~ | ou ~ ~ | á ~ ~ | au. 4. No end-rhyme between (b) and (c), but the last foot

(of c) (Δ.) is the same throughout the whole poem.  
5. Elision in l. 2.

(e) Five-line *Amhrán*—the 5th l. being a refrain—the same in every stanza :—

Mo ḡrōrón go brāt tu, —  
Mar taoi'n tu buartha suaité o'reoil,  
Má tīseann tu liomsa ḡeobair poitín is cōir,  
Agus ḡeobaird tu duais nár luadair leat pós,  
Agus seo leo toil is ná goil go fóil. (Maire Óuirde  
ní Laoisairé).

The metre is :—	1.	~   01 ~	Δ ~   Δ ~   0
	2.	~   i ~	ua ~   ua ~   0
	3.	~   i ~	o ~ ~   o ~ ~   0
	4.	~   0 ~	ua ~   ua ~   0
	5.	~   0 ~	o ~ ~   o ~   0

Observe :—1. Rūtag in every l., and last foot mono-syllabic. 2. The two middle feet in each l. assonate.

(f) *Amhrán* with eight-line stanzas :—

1° *An Raibcán* :—(a) Eight lines of three feet each, the odd and even ll. respectively having the same stresses in the same order. (b) *Aicill* in each couplet.—

Δtā mo cōrard gān fuitín,  
Is mo cuingir gān pēar gān pás,  
Δtā an-sōs ar mo muirear,  
Is a n-uillinn gān éadac slán ;  
Δtā an tōir ar mo mullač,  
So minic ó Tīsearna an stáit,  
Δtā mo bróga-sa briste,  
'S gān pimínn dā bpríaca im' láim. (Seán Clárach).

The metre is :—

- (a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.— ~ | Δ ~ | 0 ~ ~ | i (ū) ~
- (b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.— ~ | i ~ ~ | é (ia) ~ | Δ.

Observe :—1. Stanza=4 (a+b) alternating. 2. Elision in ll. 6, 8. 3. *Aicill* *donair* connecting the ll. of each couplet :—i ~ ~ : i ~ ~.

2° *An t-Octpoclaic* :—In eight-lined stanzas, when each couplet can be sub-divided into three uniform members, + a fourth of different structure, the metre is called *Octpoclaic* (p. 5. 64).—

NUAIR TÉRÓIM GO TIGCAN TÁBÁIRNE CÍS GLAOÐAÍM AR AN  
Drawer,

Is éascaidh bionn tám díobh ag teacht sios ;  
Is éigean le dáracht ná réabaim mo cárna  
Nuair pleascaim an clár is méag feadhsail ;  
Bionn saotar an báis orta—"Pray, do you call, Sir?"  
Ni feadaim san gáire fán ealaðain,  
Is tréan tig an máigistir go séisreac im' dail-se,  
Is séim tig im' lácair is beannuisgeas. (Seán Ó Tuama).

The metre is :—

- (a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.—  $\sim | \text{é} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{é} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim$   
(b) ,, 2, 4, 6, 8.—  $\sim | \text{é} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{á} \text{i}.$

This is equivalent to :—  $\sim \{ 3 (\text{é} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim \sim) \} + \text{á} \text{i}.$ —  
If we call the segment " $| \text{é} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim \sim |$ " a<sup>r</sup>, and  
" $\text{á} \text{i}$ " b<sup>r</sup>, then a+b will = 3 a<sup>r</sup>+b<sup>r</sup>, and the final formula  
for the stanza, instead of 4 (a+b) will be 4 (3 a<sup>r</sup>+b<sup>r</sup>).  
Note the elision in ll. 1, 4.

3° Eight-line stanzas of which four constitute a  
refrain :—

NÁR CAILLEADH-SA AMARC MO SÚL,  
'S NÁR LAGARÓ MO LÚC LE FOIRBTEAC,  
SO BFAICEADH AN GRÁTAM I BPÚNNAC,  
'S AN SEANA-POC DALL SAN GIOLLA-CÁISE ;  
IS OSCARDA AG COSCAIRT A NAMADH  
LE RUINNEAM SAC CRODHAIRE CINE SCUIT,  
SCRÍOSFADH AS LINNIS SAC DALL,  
'S IS SMNE BEAS TEANN 'NA BFIONNA-BRUIG. (MAC CRAIT).

- The metre is :—  
(a) ll. 1, 3.—  $\sim | \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{ú}$   
(b) ll. 2, 4.—  $\sim | \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{ú} \sim | \text{i} \sim \sim$   
(c) ll. 5, 7.—  $(\sim) | \text{o}(1) \sim \sim | \text{o}(1) \sim \sim |$   
| au  
(d) ll. 6, 8.—  $\sim | \text{i} \sim \sim | \text{ou} \sim \sim | \text{i} \sim \sim$

Observe :—1. The stanza = 2 (a+b)+2 (c+d). 2. No  
elision in l. 1. AMARC =  $\Delta$  VARC. 3. ΔICILL DÚBALTA between  
a and b :—  $\text{á} \sim \sim | \text{ú} \sim : \text{á} \sim \sim | \text{ú} \sim$ ; and between c and  
d :—  $\text{o}(1) \sim \sim | \text{au} \sim : \text{i}(o) \sim \sim | \text{au} \sim$ . 4. FOIRBTEAC is  
trisyllabic. 5. DALL = DULL.

4° Eight-lined stanzas without ΔICILL :—

FEARAIM FÍCE BEANNACHT ORT  
 A FÁINNE CAN LAE,  
 IS SÁTA SILE CÁ SCAIPEADHAGAT  
 FÉM DÁIL AG TÉACHT ;  
 LEÓITNE CANOIR ÓN ÓFAIRRGE  
 IS CEO NA SGNOC DÁ SLADAODHAIGE,  
 SLOIR NA SRUT DOM' MEALLADHANOIS  
 CUN ÁBACHTAIS AER (F.O. 10).

The metre is :—(a) ll. 1, 3.—  $\sim | \text{a} \sim | \text{i} \sim | \text{a} \sim \sim$   
 (b) ll. 2, 4, 8.—  $\sim | \text{a} \sim | \text{e.}$   
 (c) ll. 5, 6, 7.—  $| \text{o} \sim | \text{ú} \sim | \text{a} \sim \sim$

Observe :—1. Stanza—2 (a+b)+3 c+b. 2. No AICILL.

### 3. Elision in ll. 2, 3, 5-8.

(g) Stanza with fourteen lines :—

- a.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{BA BINNE SÉIS A TANA-SUÍB} \\ \text{ná FUMNEAM MÉAR AG SPREAGADH PUIRT,} \\ 'S ná CRUIT AN TÉ DO TREASCAIR MIS, } \right.$
- b. CIOÓ BAOT DOM A RÁD.
- a.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 'S BA SILE CÁ H-EADAN SNEACTAMAIL \\ ná 'n LILE CAOM, 'S ná CAN EALA CAR SRUT, \\ 'S BA SNUÍSTE CAOL A MALA SUÍOTE } \right.$
- b. AR RÉALT-DEARC GAN CÁIM ;
- c.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} A MAMA CRUINNE CAR SEANGA-CRUIT NÁR LEANADH LE \\ PRÁISC, } \right.$
- $\left. \begin{array}{l} A LEABAR-CROB DO BEARTADH LOINGEAS, ÉANLAIT IS \\ BLÁT, } \end{array} \right.$
- d.  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} BA MIÓNLA MAORDA MAISEAMAIL \\ A H-IOÍSAR 'S A SCÉIM 'S A PEARSA-CRUT, } \right.$
- $\left. \begin{array}{l} DO GRÍOSAIS MÉ CUM LABARTA \\ INS NA BRÉICRIB SEO IM' DEÁGARD. } \end{array} \right.$

The metre is :—(a)  $\sim | \text{i} \sim | \text{e} \sim | \text{a} \sim \sim$   
 (b)  $\sim | \text{e} \sim \sim | \text{a.}$   
 (c)  $\sim | \text{a} \sim \sim | \text{a} \sim \sim | \text{e} \sim \sim | \text{a}$   
 (d)  $\sim | \text{i} \sim | \text{e} \sim | \text{a} \sim \sim$ .

Observe :—1. The stanza=3a+b+3a+b+2c+3d+b.  
 2. Elision in ll. 5, 6, 7, 9. Especially the end-elision in  
 l. 7. 3. MAISEAMAIL, SNEACTAMAIL, LABARTA (=lavarha)  
 are trisyllabic. 4. (c) might be scanned :—

$\sim | \text{a} \sim | \text{i} \sim | \text{a} \sim | \text{i} \sim | \text{e} \sim \sim | \text{a} | .$

5. c. ends with b.— $\text{e} \sim \sim | \text{a}$

## APPENDIX

---

### WORD FORMATION.

#### A.—Verbal Nouns.

326.—1° In many compounds the root (especially when it ended in a guttural) is inflected as a neuter o- stem :—

ΔTARRAC (aitearrac), change (<O.I. ad-eir-rig, reforms). Cf. ΔTRIGE, ΔTREACAS, repentance ; CUIBREAC (cūmreac), binding, etc. (<O.I. con·rig, binds). New vb.—CUIBRIGIM ; CŪMDOAC, covering, etc. <O.I. con·utaing. New vb.—CŪMDUIGIM ; FOLAC, hiding <FO-LUIGIM ; TOBAC, levying, etc. (<O.I. do·boing) ; TÓRMAC, increase, etc. (<O.I. do·formaig) ; FUIREAC, detaining, waiting, watching (<fo·rig).

The above give rise to the vb. n. ending -AC :— CEANNAC, buying, vb.—CEANNUIGIM ; CUARDAC, seeking, vb.—CUARDUIGIM ; CNUASAC, gathering, vb.—CNUASUIGIM.

FULANG, suffering (<O.I. fo·loing) ; TAPANN (TATANT), driving, barking at, etc. (<O.I. do·seinn, drives). Vb.—TAPNAIM ; AÐALL, adultery, etc. (<O.I. ad·ella, visits) ; TADALL, touching, etc. (<O.I. do·aidlea, approaches, assails) ; DIALL, declension (now ÐIO-CLÆONAD).

327.—2° Some are neuter io- stems :—

ΔITNE, acquaintance (<O.I. ad·gnin, recognises) ; EAGNA, wisdom (<O.I. asa·gnin) ; FOÐA (FOÑA), attack (<O.I. fo·ben) ; FREAGRA, answer (<O.I. fris·gair) ; ÐGRA, TAGRA, FOÐRA, from the same vb. root ; LUIGE, lying. Cf. FOLAC, above ; SURDE, sitting (<\*sodium-rt. sed, sod).

328.—3° Some are ia- stems (F.) :—

Clároe, fence (act of digging) ; gurðe, prayer, etc. ; ite, to eat ; slíge, way, road, etc.

329.—4° Different stems (i- or a-), but with -t ending in modern Irish. All Feminine :—

beit, to be ; breit, to bear, etc. In compounds it takes the form -baírt. E.g.—caibairt, iobbaírt ; teacht, coming (going) ; meilt, grinding (O.I. mlith) ; cent, conceal (O.I. cleith). Cf.—cuimilt, rubbing, coisilt, concealing, sparing.

330.—5° Some were originally neuter o- stems, with -to suffix. (Cf. 326, where there was no such suffix) :—

brat, to betray, etc. (O.I. mrath <mairnid, betrays) ; rat, grace, etc. (no longer verbal) ; dearmao, mistake (dearmao, with unaspirated m, because of formao, envy).

331.—6° Masculine u- stems, some with suffix -tu- others with -mu-.

(a) With -tu :—molað, praise ; sineð, stretch. (So all verbals in -ð) ; fios (<\*vid-tu-s) ; meas, esteem, etc. (O.I. midiur, I judge) ; comeð, keep, etc. (O.I. comét. U. comeð). In fiosruisim, I enquire (< fios) the r is due to fiafruisim.

(b) With -mu :—gniom, deed ; deanam, to do ; fognam, service ; consnam, help ; sniom, spin, etc. tearnam from same root ; cosnam, defend (now also cosaint) ; tuilleam, earn (< O.I. do·sli) ; ionram, voyage (O.I. im·rá, voyages).

332.—7° Feminine n- stems, with -tiu in old N. sg.—

doeán, protection (O.I. do·eim, protects) ; foisoe, foróne, patience (O.I. foditiu, from fo·daim, suffers) ; feiscint (faicsin), to see,—v.n. of O.I. ad·ci was aicsiu < ad·ces·tió ; foisoin, confession (O.I. foísitiu, modelled on O.I. aititiu, v.n. of ad·daim, admits).

333.—8° Feminine á- stems (with suffix -má-) :—

agallam, dialogue, etc. (G. now agallima). New vb.

agallaim ; creoearm, faith (now M.) ; éigearm, cry, etc. Cf. O.I. erigem, complaint; maoirdeam, boasting (now M.).

**334.—9° Neuter n- stems (with suffix -mn- or -smn-):—**

béim, a blow, v.n. of O.I. benaid. New vb. béimim ; céim, step, v.n. of O.I. cingid. New vb.—céimnígim ; foistum, learn, v.n. of O.I. fo-gleinn. New vb.—fois-tumígim ; dréim, endeavour, etc., v.n. of dringid, climbs. Cf. dréimire, ladder ; gairm, calling. But in compounds -gra (neut. io- stem), freagra, etc. ; léim, leap, v.n. of O.I. lingid. Mod. tingsim, léimim ; marom, rout, v.n. of O.I. maidid, there is a bursting ; réim, course, etc., v.n. of O.I. réidid, journeys ; seinn (G. seanma, seimme), playing, etc. (Also seinnit, seinneamaint) ; snarom, knot. O.I. naidm, v.n. of nascid, knots ; tuictim, fall. O.I. tothaim.

**335.—10° Feminine i- stems (with suffix -ni-):—**

án, tám, iomáint, tiomáint, comáint—all=the act of driving (Rt. ag, L. ago); buam, reap, < \*bog-ni- v.n. of O.I. bongid, breaks, etc. New verbs, buamim, báimim (v.n. báint). Cf. buanurðe, a reaper.

**336.—11° Miscellaneous :—**

alram, fosterage, etc.—v.n. of O.I. alid, nurtures. Mod. oilim, v.n.—oilreamaint. But there is also a verb alramaim ; anacal, protection < O.I. aingid, protects ; aðnacal, burial—a compound of the previous word ; tiðlacakr, gift, etc.—O.I. tindnacul, v.n. of do-indnaig, bestows ; gabál (O.I. N. gabál, an a- stem, with a doubtful suffix) ; reic, sell, v.n. of O.I. renid, sells, modelled on ioc (O.I. ícc). From reic comes éiric, compensation, “ eric ” ; leanamaint, follow (O.I. lenamón) ; fanaamaint, wait (Mid. I. anad) ; cinneamaint, fate, v.n. of cinnim, I fix, appoint, etc. ; céadat, chanting, v.n. of O.I. canid, sings, with suffix -tlo, can-tlo (neuter o- stem). There are two well-known compounds: claisceadat—singing in harmony (now M.), and—poirc-eadat, instruction, etc.—v.n. of O.I. for-cun, I teach ; scribeann, a writing, téigéann, a lesson, etc., and Aif-

neann, Mass, are modelled on L. gerundial forms, and are not strictly vb. nouns.

337.—12° The v.n. is sometimes from a root other than that of the verb :—

Gal, is used as v.n. of O.I. fichid. It survives in—eagal, fear (<ek-gal), viogal, vengeance (viogalitas), fogal, robbery, fogluðe, robber, togal, destruction (Earlier togal), fiongal, the murder of a kinsman ; searc, v.n. of caraíd. loves. Déirc (<Dé+searc), the love of God, alms ; ráð, v.n. of ráðid, is now v.n. of veirím, I say, the old v.n. of which—epert, now abairt—means phrase, sentence ; teact, v.n. of O.I. tiagu (now téigim) is used as v.n. of téigim, tagaim, while tut is used as v.n. of téigim.

### B.—Other Nouns.

338.—I.—Combination of adjective and noun :—

Deag-cómairle, good advice ; iolar, many people, things (<il, many and rear); aro-ri, high King ; Fionn-barr, “fair-head,” St. Fionbarr ; mórcúis, self-esteem ; gearr(a)-curo, a considerable number (amount).

339.—II.—Combination of noun and noun :—

Talam-cúmscuð, earthquake ; muir-bran, sea-raven ; rið-teac, palace ; fið-cat, mousetrap, lit.—wood-cat ; marc-sluað, cavalcade ; briatar-cat, word battle ; dún-marbað, homicide ; ban-cara, woman-friend ; bainfes (bain+feis), wedding-feast ; anam-cara, spiritual director ; fion-gort, vineyard ; aball-gort, orchard.

340.—III.—Combination of indeclinable particle (other than a preposition) with a noun :—

Soileas (<so+leas), comfort, etc. ; soiceall, joy, opposed to voiceall, churlishness ; socar, profit, opposed to vocar, loss ; mi-meas, disrespect ; mi-sásam, dissatisfaction ; mi-maise, ugliness ; mi-teist, infamy ; deogair, diphthong (<de-fogar). De is composition form of do, two ; ana-lá, a great day ; ana-tabairt amac, a

great display ; *bic-brig*, essence ; *aon-mac De*, the only Son of God ; *moeom* (*aim-moeom*) in phrase *moeom*, in spite of ; *ameolas*, ignorance ; *aindeise*, affliction, etc. ; *ainmian*, passion ; *eagcoir* (<*en-coir*), injustice ; *eascardeact*, promptitude (from *scit*, weariness) ; *ainleas*, disimprovement, etc. ; *amras* (<*ain-meas*, lit.—want of faith), doubt *neamhid*, nothing ; *neamh-suim*, carelessness.

**341.—IV.**—By means of prepositional prefixes. (Some vb. nouns are included) :—

1° The prep. *ad*, Lat. ad :—

(a) Before vowels and old *u*, it appears as *ad* :—

*Aonacat*, burial (<*ad-anacal*) ; *tarobse*, ghost, v.n. of O.I. *do-ad-bat*, shows ; *adorad*, adoration.

(b) The *o* assimilates with *t*, *v*, *c*, *s*, *b*, *m* :—

*Attreab*, dwelling, <*ad-treabh*, with *a* because of *at* ; *avusad*, kindling (fire), from *ad-vosad* ; *acsin* (feis-cmt), from \**ad-ces-tio* ; *amus*, aim, etc., from *ad-mess*.

(c) Before *t*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *a* :—

*an*, pleasure, from *ad-li* ; *aran*, counting, from *ad-niom* ; *ainsid*, Accusative case, from *ad-ness*—(O.I. *ainsem*).

(d) With the preposition *o* following, it combined to form generally *eo*, *ro*, and in modern I. *ion*, *ir* :—

*lobairt*, *robirt*, sacrifice, from O.I. *ad-od-beir*, ad-opair.

**342.—2°** The prep. *ar* :—

When stressed it appears in modern Irish as :—

(a) O.IR.—*oirdearcas*, conspicuousness (from *dearc*).

(b) Ur, or ÚR.—*úrnugte*, prayer, prayers. O.I. *erini-gude*, *irnigde* ; *úrlabra*, speech, rhetoric. Syncopated in *aitrige*, repentance (O.I. *ad-eir-rige*).

**343.—3°** The prep. *at* (*ait*). It has three forces in modern Irish :—*reiterative*, *intensive* and *negative* :—

*aitne*, acquaintance ; *aiteasc*, answer (Same rt. as in *cosc*, check) ; *at-lá*, another day ; *aitbhliain*, New Year ; *atcumse*, request ; *tataoir*, reproach.

344.—4° The prep. **céad** :—

Found only in **céadfarð**, sense. Thurneysen equiparates it with Gk. *κατά*. We have the same formation in W. *canfod*, to perceive.

345.—5° The prep. **com** (L. *cum*, *con-*) :—

(a) Before vowels, and i, u, r,—**cóm** :—

**Cómairle**, advice ; **coimdeact**, accompanying ; **cóm-luadar**, company ; **cómasc**, conjunction ; **cómrað**, conversation.

(b) Before i, e, u, sometimes **cum** (**cuimh**) :—

**Cuimreac** (**cuibreas**), binding ; **cúmsanð**, repose, etc. (**cóm-uð-ess-anadh** ?).

(c) Before **v**, con ; before **s**, con- combining with **s** to form **ns** (single consonant) :—

**Coimreac**, comparison ; **congnam**, help (**nsn=nn**) ; **congbán**, to keep.

(d) It eclipses **t**, **c**, giving **cov-**, **cos-** :—

**Cotlæð**, sleep (<*con-tulud*) ; **cosvæð**, war (<*con-cat*) ; **cosgar**, whisper (<*con-cor*).

(e) Before **s** it becomes **co-** (with original doubling of **s**) :—**Cosmail**, like (<*samail*) ; **cosamlað**, likeness ; **cosnam**, protection (<*co-snior*).

(f) Before old **v** the **m** disappears in **cuaroð** (*com-ved*) ; so in **cuimne** (*com-men*). But **cumasc**, mixture, and **cuimilt**, rubbing, have unaspirated **m**. In other cases **m—v** (f) give **v** :—**cubus**, conscience, <*ψιος* ; **cuðaroð**, **cuðbe**, fitting (*com+fid*). Noun **cuðbeas** ; **coibneas**, relation (*com+fine+as*).

(g) In borrowed words :—

1° **Con** (**com**) renders the L. *con-* :—

**Comþliðct**, conflict (with eclipse of **f-**) ; **comtinn**, contention ; **coinsias**, conscience.

2° **Com-** before **p** :—

**Compóðo**, comfort ; **comparðo**, comparison ; **compánac**, companion. But see other exx. under (h).

(h) In later compounds the antevocalic form **cóm-** is used before all consonants, and aspirates (in imitation of **réam-** before) :—

**Cómitionól**, gathering ; **cómbrúðsæð**, contrition ; **cóm-gluaiseact**, simultaneous movement ; **cómþairtride**, part-

ner ; *cómceangat*, union ; *cómroatta*, member of a society ; *cómraorðeam*, congratulation.

**346.—6°** The prep. *vi*, *ve* :—

(a) Before vowels, and most consonants, *vi* :—

*Viall*, declension ; *viogbán*, injury ; *vitreab*, hermitage ; *vimeas*, disrespect ; *viocuimne*, forgetfulness ; *viþfeing*, vengeance.

(b) Before *ro*, and broad *c*, *ȝ*, *þ*, —*ve* :—

*Vearmav*, mistake, etc. ; *veacor*, difference ; *véanam*, to do (with compensatory lengthening) ; *veabaro*, strife (de+buith).

**347.—7°** The prep. *as* (L. ex.) :—

(a) Before vowels, and *c*, *t*, *s*, —*eas*, *eis* :—

*Easonór*, dishonour ; *eisíomplán*, example ; *eisceact*, exception to a rule ; *eascara*, enemy ; *teastabán*, v.n. of O.I. *do·esta*, is wanting, etc. ; *easláimte*, illness (*eas-sláimte*).

(b) Sometimes *aís* :—

*Aiséirge*, resurrection. Perhaps due to *aís* in *tan-n-aís*, back. Cf.—*aiseas* (<*ioc*), restitution : vomiting ; *aísnéis*, predication.

(c) Before *t*, *m*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *é* :—

*Éalóð*, escape, etc. (*ess-lud*) ; *énirte*, weakness. Now *mirte*, owing to inert, inertia ; *éiric*, compensation (*ess-reic*).

(d) Before *b*, *v*, *ȝ*, it appears as *ek-* with assimilation of *k*, giving unaspirated *b*, *v*, *ȝ* :—

*Abairt*, phrase=O.I. *epert*<\**ek-bert* ; *eagat*, fear, <\**ek-gal*.

**348.—8°** The prep. *gan*, O.I. *cen* :—

Only in *ceanntar*, the district on this side, as opposed to *alltar* (obs.) the district on the other side. The radical meaning of O.I. *cen* was "on this side of," hence "without." Cf.—L. *cis*, *citra* ; Gk. *ἐκεῖ*, there ; and I. *bith cé*, this world here.

**349.—9°** The prep. *idin*, *eavær*, L. *inter* :—

*Eavarsuoteoir*, intercessor ; *Varðom*, Thursday—

"the day between two fasts." *rón* causes aspiration (imitating *an*). If *Oarðom* is from "Oar ða ðom," the non-aspiration of the second *r* may be due to *Céadom* (which it follows), or to assimilation to the initial *r*.

350.—10° The prep. *fo* (Modern *fó*, *fé*, *fa*, *faoi*) :—

(a) Before consonants, *fo*, *fó* (with compensatory lengthening) :—

*Foisgoe*, *foróne*, patience ; *fógnam*, service.

(b) Before *o*, *a*,—*fó*, *fuá*, *fa* :—

*Fógra*, announcement (*fo-od-gaire*) ; *fóbairt*, attack (*fo-od-bert*) ; *fuasnád*, tumult (*fo-od-ess-anad?*) ; *fásán*, leaving (*fo-ad-gabháil*).

(c) Before syncopated *a* in second syllable—*fa* :—

*Fágáil*, to get (*fo-gabháil* ; *fágáitás*, means, property).

351.—11° The prep. *for*, Gk. *ὑπέρ*, L. super :—

*formad*, envy (*for-ment-*) ; *foráil*, excess. With metathesis, *furáir*, unnecessary ; *forgnuirgeoir*, a builder (CMD. 338). Often with *o*, and aspirating :—*fóirceann*, the very end ; *fórlamas* (*forlámás*), usurpation, etc. ; *fóirneart*, tyranny.

352.—12° The prep. *frí(t)*. Root vrt. of L. *vorsus* :—

(a) Before vowels, *frít* :—

*Frítm̄s*, return track ; *fríotálam*, service ; *aris*, again < a frith-éissi, Accus. of Space.

(b) Before consonants, the orig. th of frith assimilates :

*freagra*, an answer (<frith-gaire).

(c) Later compounds show *frít* before consonants (aspirating like *aic-*) :—

*Fríotbualad*, repercussion ; *fríocnam*, care, diligence = earlier *frithgnam* (<*gníomh*). Th became h, unvoicing gh. The long i may be due to *criocnamail*, which has the same meaning as the adj. *fríocnamail*.

353.—13° The prep. *iar*, after :—

*fiarfurðe*, enquiry (v.n. of O.I. ·*iarfóig*, with prothetic *f*, metathesis of *r* and *f*, and (in finite verb forms) assimilation to verbs in -*is* ; *iartar*, West (aspiration in imitation of *oirtear*). So *iar-Mrðe*, *iar-Mumá* ;

*tarlann*, pantry ; *tarȝcūl*, backward place ; *tarmbeartla*, adverb, etc.

354.—14° The prep. *imbi*, *im* (modern *um*) :—

(a) Before vowels and *r—im*, *iom* :—

*imeagla*, great fear ; *iomām*, hurling ; *imreimhre*, obesity ; *timceall* (with *to-*), round, about.

(b) Before *s—imp* :—

*imprōð*, to turn (<*imbi-soud*) ; *imprōe*, supplication (<*imbi-suroe*). But later :—*imsearc*, warm affection. *imsniom*, fatigue, etc.

(c) Before other consonants, *im-* (aspirating) :—

*imteact*, going away ; *imdeargad*, reviling, etc. ; *im-imigcēm*, afar. (A contamination of *imcēm* and *igcēm*).

355.—15° The prep. *in* :—

In composition it has three forms, *in-*, *en-* and *ini-* (Gk. *ἐνι*), and a fourth form *ind-* is probably identical with the L. prep. *endo*, *indu* in *induere*, to put on, *Induperator*, archaic form of *Imperator*.

(a) *en*—which becomes *e* before *c*, *t* :—

*éisteact*, listening. O.I. *étsecht* ; *eaȝcōir*, wrong. In *teagass*, teaching, and *eaȝar*, arrangement, the short *e* is irregular.

(b) *mo-* (now *monn*) :—

*Tionnscadat*, a beginning, v.n. of O.I. *do-in-scanna* ; *tionnscal*, design, etc. (Pron. *tiūscal* in W. Munster) ; *tionntōð*, turning (<*to-indi-soud*) *ionnarba*, exile (O.I. *indarbae*) ; *ionnrāð*, attack (K.), O.I. *indred*.

(c) Before vowels, and many consonants, *m* :—

*infiūcað*, scanning ; *inrō*, Shrovetide. L. *initium*, beginning (of Lent) ; *mbeær*, estuary ; *timfead*, aspiration. O.I. *tinfed* <*to-in-fed* (sved.).

(d) *mi-* :—

*úrnuitste* (See 342) ; *inȝean*, daughter, Ogham *inigena*. Cf. L. *indigena*, native.

356.—16° The prep. *ð* (*ua*, *oð*, *uðð*) :—

(a) Syncopated :—

*loðbairt*, sacrifice ; *ðiomus*, pride (<*di-ud-mess*) ;

cúmhoac, protection, etc. (<com-ud-ding—conutaing).

(b) After po, ro, to, we get pō, rō, tō :—

fésgá, announcement ; tósgáil, raising. In tobair, well, and tosac, beginning, the short o is irregular.

(c) Before i,—ó :—

Tionól, a gathering.

**357.—17°** The prep. ne, before :—

The composition form in modern I. is réam.

Réamfocal, preposition ; réamrás, foreword ; réamteactaróe, antecedent (of relative).

**358.—18°** The prep. no, L. pro :—

Roṣa, choice (subjective), toṣa (objective) ; ros, promontory (<prosthā ?) ; dearmao, mistake, etc.

**359.—19°** The prep. seac :—

Seacadaró Novlag, Xmas box (<2 sg. prep. pron. seacaró, past you).

**360.—20°** The prep. tar :—

Toirmeasc, confusion, etc. ; tarimteact, transgression.

**361.—21°** The prep. to (pretonic, oo) :—

(a) Before consonants—mostly to (tu), tō (with compensatory lengthening) :—

Tuitim, falling, O.I. tothaim ; tómas, riddle, etc. (<to-fo-mess) ; ti- in tigeact (modelled on tigim ?). O.I. tuidecht, with ó for th.

(b) TA, tÁ :—

Tábaírt, <to-bert, because of the Perf.-tarat (<do-rat) ; tarla, happened, <O.I. tarla (<do-rala.)

(c) Te- in teiltim, I throw away, v.n. teilgean. From to-en-léig <teillg, teilg (*Thurn.*, 481).

(d) Ti- in Conn. Fut. tiubráo, on the model of the old reduplicated Fut. with i in reduplicating syllable.

(e) Before vowels, t- (tō, tua, before oð-, tósgáil) :—

Tám, drove, etc. (<to-ag-ni-s) ; tuisgint, timceall (i because of position before -mbc).

(f) **Tó-** before **for**, **oð** :—

**Tórmáð**, increase, v.n. of O.I. do-for-maig ; **tósgáil**, raising, <to-od-gabáil.

362.—22° The prep. **tré** :—

**Tríall**, journey. Cf. **áðall**, **taðall**, **víall**, from the same root.

V.—By means of Suffixes.

363.—A.—From adjectives :—

1° The suffix **-e** (=old -ia) :—

**fáinte**, welcome, from **fáilrō**, joyous ; **fuaire**, coldness. With many adjectives, however, this suffix is not used. E.g.—**mór**, **beag**, etc, those in -ámail, or those ending in a vowel.

2° **-e** (< -io, orig. neut. stems) :—

**Deise**, prettiness, etc. ; **maise**, beauty. Now F. like those in 1°.

3° **-ise**, **-se** (an extension of 2°) :—

**Saoirse**, freedom ; **váoirse**, bondage. Now F. like 1° and 2°.

4° **-tut**. O.I. Nom. in -u (Now in -a, or -e) :—

**Beata**, life, O.I. bethu ; **sláinte**, health, O.I. slántu.

5° **-as**. Old -us < essus, estus ; and **as** from -assus :—

**lónnras**, uprightness ; **bínneas**, melody. O.I. bindius.

6° **-s**, from monosyllabic adjectives :—

**váois**, folly (**váot**) ; **gáois**, wisdom (**gáot**, wise) ; **gnás**, fashion (**gnát**) ; **scíos** (**scís**), fatigue (**scít**).

7° **-act** (Collective and abstract) :—

**Cosamlact**, likeness, etc. ; **cisteact**, cleverness ; **móract**, majesty ; Nouns in -act from adjectives in -mar seem to come through the abstract in -e :—**lionmár**, numerous, gives **lionmáire**, **lionmáireact** ; **neartmár**, strong, gives **neartmáire**, **neartmáireact**.

8° **-a** (Now mostly -e. O.I. bochta, poverty, now **boicte**). But—**úrlaðra**, speech ; **ceannsa**, gentleness (Now usually an adj. The old adj. was ceannais. K. has **ceannais**).

9° **-TAS, -DAS**=Mid. I. tu+as. The former is used after consonants, the latter after vowels :—

**Dréantás**, putridity, Mid. I. bréntu ; **dorcadás**, darkness, Mid. I. dorchatu.

10° **-AR, -ACAR** :—

**tolar**, many, from **tl-** ; the few in **-ACAR** may have originated in **salaçar**, dirt, from **salaç**, dirty (lit. salacious) ; **laçacar**, weakness ; **mallaçar**, weakness (mostly of sight).

11° **-T**, from adjs. in **-AC** :—

**feadmannaçt**, stewardship ; **carrannaçt**, charity.

12° **-AO** :—

**uatao**, singleness, etc., either from the rt. seen in Gk. *aútós* self, same, or from pau- as in L. paucus, few.

13° **ioe** (preceded by a dim. suffix **-qo-**) :—

**Seancaroe**, story-teller. Cf. L. *senex*, I. **seancas**, history, etc. The L. re-ci-pro-cu-s, going backwards and forwards, contains the suffix **-qo-** twice.

14° **-SEAC**, a F. termination. Cf. L. **-issa** :—

**Sainseac**, foreign women, ear-wig ; **céinseac**, female blackbird (**ciar**, black) ; **bámseac**, white cow ; **minnseac**, young she-goat (*mionn-án*, *meann-án*, kid) ; **gírrseac**, girl (**gearr**). **loingseac**, exile, etc., does not contain this suffix, but **-AC** from **loingeas** exile, etc.

15° **is-tero-**. A double comparative suffix found in :—

**Sinnsear**, elder, ancestor <sen-is-teros ; **sóisear**, junior (O.I. óssar) modelled on the preceding. The suffix **-is-** is the weakest form of the compar. suffix found in L. *iōs*, *ies*, *is*. (L. *major*<*mag-iōs* ; *majestas* < *mag-ies-tas* ; *mag-is*).

16° **-AC** :—

**fásac**, desert, from **fás**, waste, L. *vastus*.

17° **-ine**. Cf. L. **-inia** :—

**fírinne**, truth.

18° **óS** :—

**gnátoS**, wild beast's lair ; **ciaróS**, black chafer (**ciar**, black).

19° **-ÁN** (dim.) :—

**beagán**, little, few ; **mórán**, much, many ; **Ciarán** (man's name).

364.—B.—From nouns :—

1° -ACT :—

Teactaireact, message ; filroeact, poetry ; breiteamnact, judgeship. From nouns like this last one—annact, spread. E.g.—Bibdamnacht, from bibdu (a dental stem). Hence bitemannac, thief, villain.

2° -ACTAM (in vb. nouns, -ACTANT, -CANT) :—

Curoeactam, company ; aireactant, hearing ; ait-beodcant, reviving. In vb. nouns -ACTANT seems to come from beannactam, matlactam (D. sg.), with -t added, as in panamant, teanamant.

3° -AS :—

Lanamnas, carnal intercourse ; adaltras, adultery. This contains also the compar. -ter (syncopated, -tr), with reminiscence, no doubt, of L. adulter, adulterium. The other form, adaltranas, from adaltrannac, which, perhaps, owes its -annac, to eactrannac, foreigner.

4° -ISSE, Mod. -ISE :—

Fiaonaise, witness, O.I. fiadu, a witness, G. fiadan. There is no need to call in the Mid. Eng. witnesse to explain our form.

5° -RAÐ, -RARÐ, collective.

Luaitread (luaitreac) ashes. Cf. L. lavo, I wash. Ashes are Nature's soap ; oigre(að), ice, O.I. aig-red ; gniomrað, deeds. From this gniomartæ, used as Pl. of gniom. Cf. connarta, Pl. of connrað ; laocrað, fighting men. L. laicus, layman (Clerics were exempt from military service) ; macrað, youths ; samrað, Summer (Gk. ημέρα, day) ; geimreæð, Winter (L. hiems).

6° -LAIT, collective (Really the n. flait, Kingdom) :— Eanlait, birds (the bird Kingdom).

7° -TRACT, collective :—

Bantract, women-folk.

8° -AIRT, collective :—

Conairt, hounds. Possibly the noun srait, series (Cf. L. sero). For the change in form in compounds, cf. breit, tabairt, etc.

9° -LAC, collective. (The n. stóð, stuag, host) :—

Teaglac, household ; muclac, piggery, drove of pigs.

10° -IOE (earlier -ro, -ith), denoting the agent :—

Scéalrœ, story-teller ; ainnmnrœ, the Nominative,

11° -*am*, -*eam*, denoting the agent :—

*Dreiceam*, judge ; *peiceam*, debtor, from *píaca*, debts; *tuaṁ*, pilot, <\*pleu- ; *Dúileam*, Creator, from *dúil*, creature, element. *peallsam*, philosopher, is assimilated to this class. Earlier felsub, from L. (Gk.) *philosophus*.

12° -*aire* (L. -ārius), denoting the agent :—

*Teactaire*, messenger ; *básaire*, executioner ; *reasaire*, law-giver ; *álaire*, brood-mare.

13° -*ín*, agent, instrument :—

*Dóirseoír*, door-keeper ; *comhleoir*, candlestick.

14° -*úir*, -*túir*, agent :—

*Doctúir*, doctor ; *créatúir*, creature, is, like Eng. creature, derived from L. *creatura*.

15° -*tóir*, -*dóir*, -*adóir*, also denote the agent :—

*Ceoltóir*, musician ; *spealtadóir*, mower ; *bréagadóir*, wheedler ; *seanadóir*, senator ; *purgatóir*, Purgatory. From these last two the suffix -*adóir* spread.

16° -*án*, diminutive :—

*Liomán*, elm. O.I. *lem*, L. *ulmus* ; *cnocán*, hillock ; *corcán*, pot, from *crocán*, from E. *crock*.

17° -*gán*, -*agán*, diminutive :—

*Iosagán*, little Jesus ; *Aodagán*, Egan, <*Aod*. We may have here a blending of the Britannic -og (=I. ac) with -án. Or *g* may be due to *beagán*, etc. We find also :—

-*acán*—*mearacán*, thimble ; -*acán*—*scagacán*, strainer ; -*nacán*—*samnacán*, salmon-trout, from *sam*, summer ; -*aoán*—*bréagaoán*, toy, *bioránaoán*, pin-cushion ; -*račán* *bogracán*, blubberer.

18° -*nait* (-*naít*), diminutive :—

*Blátnait*, Little Flower ; *oreanncait*, flea, <*dearg-naid* ; *Gobnaít*, St. Gobnait ; *tiatlait*, saddle, may also have this suffix ; *truağnaít* (KP. 75), poor wretch.

19° -*ín*, diminutive :—

*Þirín*, little man ; *Nóirín*, little Nora.

20° -*ós*, -*tós* (diminutive originally) :—

*Sröeos*, fairy ; *mioltós*, gnat ; *cuasnós* (*cünsós*) nest of honey-bees—from *cuas*, recess, hollow.

21° -*ne*, -*ine*, diminutive, collective, singulative :—

*Þointne*, single hair—from *poit* (collective) ; *gráinne*, a grain ; *ambte*, stormy weather—from *anfaró*, storm.

## 22° -lo (I. -at) :—

TUATAL, withershins. Cf. tuaro, North (the left); veiseal, the turn to the right; teimeal, darkness; neat, cloud—from neb-lo. L. nebula.

## 23° -ANAS :—

TRÉROEANAS, abstinence. (Three days, three days' fast and abstinence—from tréroe, three things, under the influence of L. triduanus. Cf. aðaltranas. 3°.)

## 24° -CEART, with local meaning :—

TUAISCEART, the North (the -s- is due to veisceart, the South).

## 25° -LANN, where things or persons are kept :—

Deaclann, apiary; leabarlann, library; otarlann, infirmary; amarcann, theatre; airmleann, armoury; biallann (*Oriel*), kitchen. Annlann, sauce, contains the root of W. llyn, drink. Cf. I. tinn.

## 26° -TAS, -TÁS :—

Aiteantás, knowledge; fiaðantás, wildness; úsgoar-tas (úsgoarás) authority. Mid. I. augtortas.

## 27° -AC :—

Connleac (conniac), stubble—from Mid. I. condall, stalk, stubble.

## 28° -ARNAC (In some instances, from -AR and -NAC, the suffix -AC with accretion of n from n- stems) :—

Cogarnac, whispering; clagarnac, heavy rain. In these two the suffix is really -nac. From them may have spread -arnac; cnaðarnac, crackling; tiacarnac, sighing; luibearnac, weeds; siosarnac, whispering (siosa, a hiss); gnúsarnac, soft lowing of a cow.

## 29° -ACTAC, collective or iterative :—

Casaactac, coughing—from rt. cas, W. pas, hooping cough; gnúsactac, soft lowing.

## 30° -RAC, -LAC—of the noises made by animals :—

Amastrac, barking—from amastar (suffix really -ac); gémreac (also gémneac), lowing; grágallac, clucking of hens (onomatopoeic); siosarac, siotarac (sitreac), neighing; -ARTAC, in :—sraotartac, sneezing (sraot), ualltartac (uallpartac), said of swine (uallfairt, growl). Here the suffix is really -ac.

## 31° -SAIL, -SAL, -UÍOL :—

Camastuíol, moral crookedness ; GRÁSSAÍL, clucking ; SNUSSAÍL, lowing; PUSUÍOL, pouting; FEASUÍOL, whistling.

## 32° -SINE :—

FÁISTINE, prophecy—from FÁIRÓ, prophet. O.I. fáith-sine.

## 365.—C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns.

## 1° -TAR :—

OIRTEAR, the East. Cf. prep. AR, and adv. TOIR ; IARTAR, the West. Cf. prep. IAR, and adv. TIAR ; uaCTAR, the top ; ioCTAR, the bottom ; ceannTAR, district ; neaCTAR, ceaCTAR, one of two or more.

## 2° -LANN :—

IARLANN, back room, pantry. The word IARLEAC, tomb-stone, occurs in the U. song, Éamonn Óuiré.

## 366.—D.—From Verbs.

## 1° -IO, the agent, or kindred meaning :—

ΔÍNSIÓ, Accusative case—from ad-ness-.

## 2° -AČT, abstract :—

TUGTACT, proneness to—from the participle TUGTA.

## 3° -AS, -TAS :—

TAÞARTAS, gift—from the participle TAÞRTA ; FÁGALTAS, means—from the participle FÁGALTA (FÁGALTA).

## 4° -NT- (-AO) :—

CARA, friend—from CARARÓ, loves. Cf. L. participle in -nt.

## 5° -VÓS (Cf. Gk. Perf. Part. Act. in -ωS) :—

COIMDIU, Lord, mod. COIMDE, from \*com-med-vós. O.I. midiur, I judge.

## 6° -S :—

ÓAS, death. Orig. v.n. to root ba-. Cf. Gk. ἔβη, Sk. agat, he went.

## 7° -AM, the agent :—

LUAM, pilot—from root \*pleu, to sail.

## 8° -NEOIR (through v. nouns in -n), -TÓIR, -AOIR :—

SCRIBNEOIR, writer ; MOLTOIR, adjudicator ; FIGEAOIR, weaver.

## 9° -tro- (I. -τΑΡ) :—

ΤΟΤΑΡ (totar), canal, cauldron, etc. L. lavacrum, bath ; ΤΑΡΑΤΑΡ (taratar), gimlet. Gk. τέρε-τρο-ν.

## 10° -ΑΙΡΕ :—

ΚΛΑΘΑΙΡΕ, thief, rogue, a fish after shedding its spawn. Cf. κλαρίσιμ, I dig. For the deterioration in meaning, cf. E. knave, villain, pagan.

## Formation of Adjectives.

367.—See 84. Besides the suffixes enumerated there, note the following :—

## 1° From Numerals :—

## (a) -to, -eto (I. εΑΩ) :—

ΚΥΓΕΑΩ, seiseao, 5th, 6th.

## (b) The double suffix -mmo+-eto (I. -ΜΑΩ) :—

ΤΡΙΜΑΩ, ceatramao, 3rd, 4th, etc. In the I.G. period sometimes -mo was used, sometimes to. E.g.—L. decimus, 10th <\*dekm-mo-s. Gk. δέκατος <\*dekm-to-s. The two are combined in the I. suffix -μαω.

## 2° From Nouns :—

## -ιΝΕΑČ, -ΑΝΑČ :—

ΤΟΙΤΕΑΝΑČ, willing (τοιτ) ; ΟΛΙΣΤΕΑΝΑČ, legal (ολισ). These suffixes originated from words like αιμμνεάč, αιβαναč (from nn-, n- stems) with the suffix -άč ; μΑΡΤΑΝАČ, lasting—from мартам, G. мартана.

## 3° From Prepositions :—

## -lo :—

УASAT, noble (os, above) ; iseat, lowly (ios, is, below).

## Formation of Verbs.

368.—1° Many verbs are derived from nouns and adjectives, by adding the termination -ιS, uis :—

ΣΑΟΤРУИСИМ, I work ; ΤΕΑΣУИСИМ, I improve, etc. When the noun was an n- stem, this n appears before the suffix :—

Δimniȝim, I name ; céimniȝim, I step, advance. This class affects other verbs, "n" appearing by analogy :—

Crioc-n-uȝim, I finish—from crioc (a- stem) ; cruit-n-iȝim, I create, form—from crut (u- stem) ; crioc-n-uȝim, I tremble—from crit, G. creatā, shaking, ague.

Further *normal* examples :—

Slánuȝim, I make well ; fóllusȝim, I publish (fóllus, clear) ; árduȝim, I raise ; isluȝim, I lower.

2° Many verbs are compounded with prepositions. These have been dealt with already.

### Crioc.

